



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

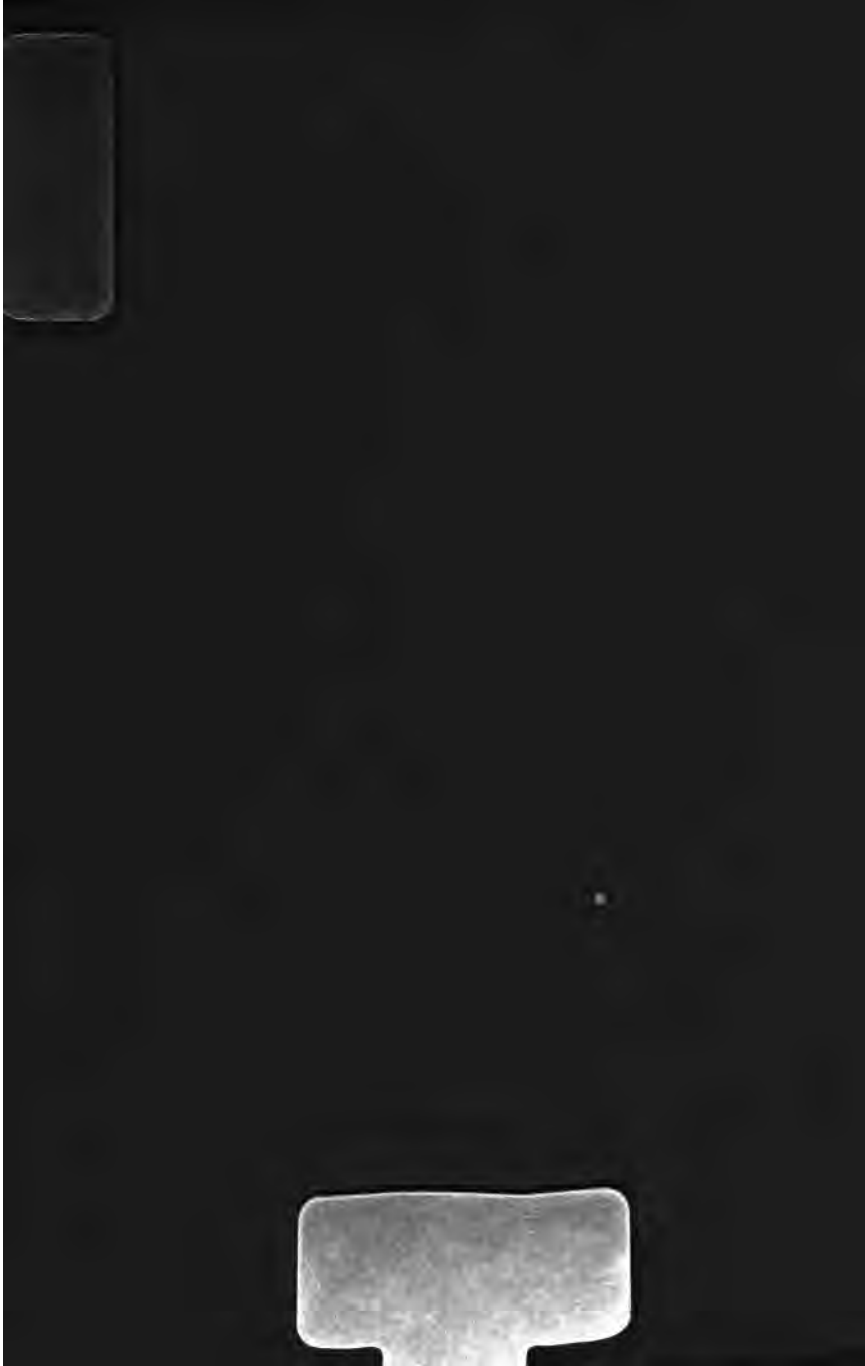
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





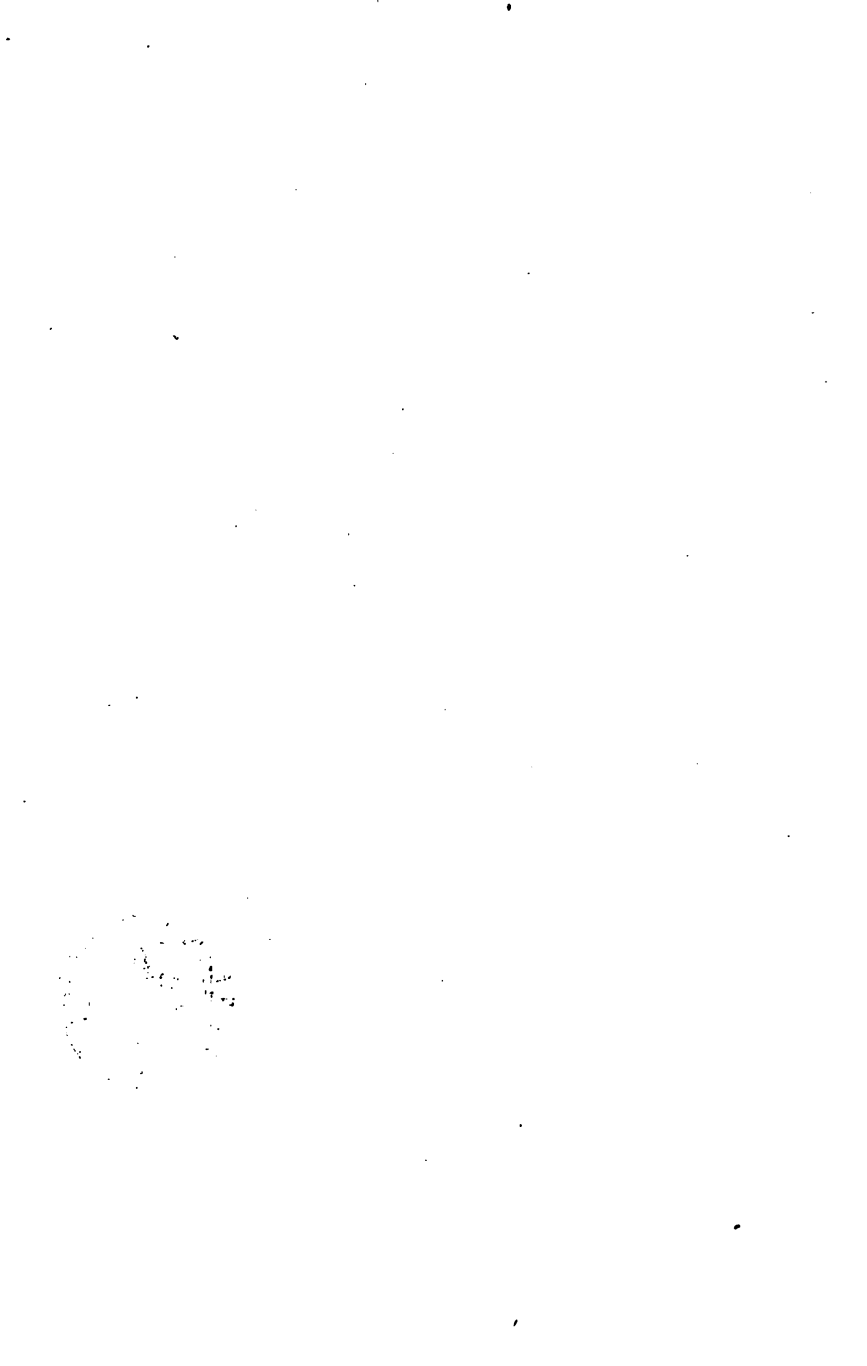
The first part of the paper discusses the importance of understanding the cultural context of the research. It highlights the need for researchers to be sensitive to the values and beliefs of the communities they are studying. This is particularly important in the field of education, where cultural differences can significantly impact learning outcomes. The paper then moves on to discuss the challenges of conducting research in diverse cultural settings. It notes that researchers often face difficulties in establishing rapport with participants and in interpreting their responses. To address these challenges, the paper suggests several strategies, including the use of local researchers and the development of culturally appropriate research instruments. The final part of the paper discusses the importance of ethical considerations in cross-cultural research. It emphasizes the need for researchers to obtain informed consent from participants and to ensure that their research does not cause harm to the communities they are studying.

810.12 r 55





AUSTRALIA.



AUSTRALIA :

OR

FACTS AND FEATURES, SKETCHES AND INCIDENTS

OF

AUSTRALIA AND AUSTRALIAN LIFE.

WITH NOTICES OF NEW ZEALAND.

BY

A CLERGYMAN

THIRTEEN YEARS RESIDENT IN THE INTERIOR OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

Let thine eyes look right on,
And let thine eyelids look straight before thee.
Ponder the path of thy feet,
And let all thy ways be established.—*Proverbs.*

LONDON :

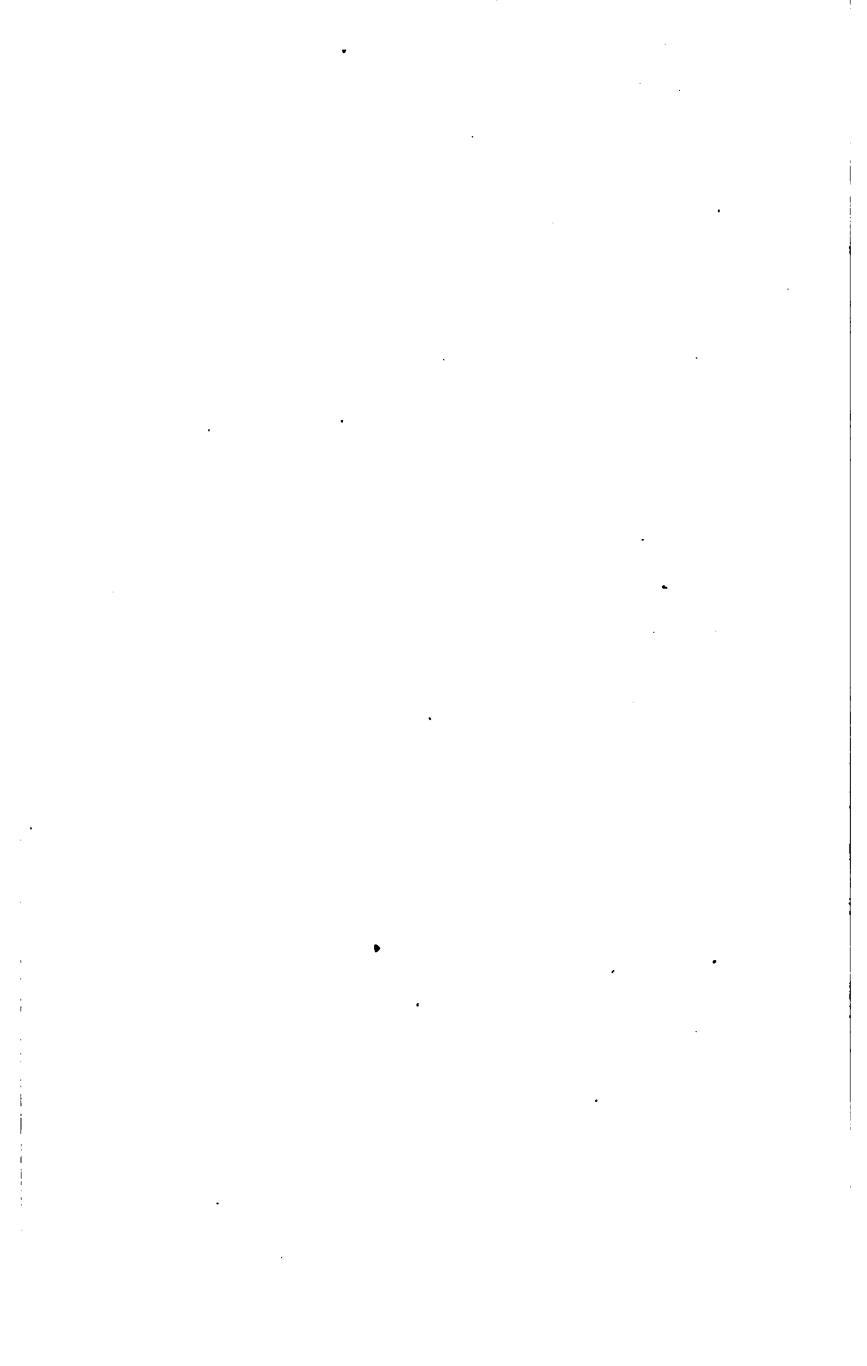
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND

1867.



~~226. k. 52.~~

712.12. 5.55.



TO
WILLIAM MACLEAY, Esq., M.P.,
SYDNEY,

AND
THOSE MEMBERS OF THE LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF
NEW SOUTH WALES WHO OPPOSED THE PASSING
OF THE NEW LAND ACT OF THAT COLONY,

THIS VOLUME IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED

BY
THE AUTHOR.



P R E F A C E.

A CLERGYMAN may freely dispense with strait-lacedness when he finds conscientiously that he can be of greater service by being liberal-minded; and any apprehensions which the author might entertain of trespassing upon the so-called 'dignity of the profession,' would not be likely to meet with much favour from the reader. The writer's mind has been wholly unbiassed. He has been actuated solely from a regard to the sacred interests of truth. His opinions may be open to question, but he desires that the facts which have been recorded may be regarded as true. The multitude and variety of those facts is easily explained, from the circumstance of the writer having been long engaged as an itinerant clergyman, during which time he never dreamed of shutting his eyes and ears to what he saw and heard. The dark side of the picture may be too frequently presented, but, if good examples are useful for imitation, evil ones ought to be no less useful for deterring. Returning to his native land at a time when the country is in a fever of excitement on the question of political reform, the author deems it a solemn duty to state what some of the results of the most liberal possible extension of the franchise have been in New South Wales. During the reign of enlightenment, there are none who have been so largely benefited as the

working-classes of Great Britain. In so far as the diffusion of knowledge and of much else are concerned, the humblest labourer may claim equality with the highest peer in the land ; whilst the lower classes have no lack of representatives in Parliament. Shake the vessel, and you inevitably shake the contents ; disturb the foundation, and you disturb all that rests upon it. When great errors have been committed, and public injuries are sustained, there is everything to be gained by a statement of the truth—the plain, unvarnished, outspoken truth. The author pleads this as an apology for his mode of treatment of the subject ‘Democracy,’ in the concluding chapter.

Whatever the defects of the work may be, it will be found that it presents little, if indeed anything, of the nature of a ‘compilation’ *padded* at the expense of preceding writers—the author’s wide and varied fields for personal observation having rendered him in a great measure independent of other authorities. The two or three extracts which appear have been given simply because they convey certain information more effectively than the writer could have hoped to give it.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

	PAGE
Chinese Expedients for Communicating Information to Chinese Settlers—Reasons for Emigrants Refraining from Letter Writing—Precarious Condition of New Settlers—Cautious Gold-Diggers—Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand—Mistakes of Emigrants in not ascertaining the Districts suitable for them—A Local Governor's Advice—Cotton Growing—Manners and Customs—Peculiarities and Uncertainties of Colonial Legislation,	1

CHAPTER II.

THE BUSH.

First Sight of Australia—Physical Outlines and Configuration—Eastern and Western Falls of the Water—Climate—Queensland—Vegetation in Australia and New Zealand—Birds—Fish—Wild Animals—Reptiles—Insects—Bees—Fruits, Indigenous and European—English Vegetables—Atmospheric Peculiarities and Phenomena—Diversity of Country and Climate—Occupation of the Land—Geological Wonders—Alligators—New Discoveries,	13
--	----

CHAPTER III.

PIONEERING.

Early Settlement—Variety of Country—Cheap Land and Money-Making—Aboriginal Guides—Singular Experiences of a Pioneer—Stories about Blacks—Shooting a Tribe—Poisoning a Tribe—Savage Blacks—A Bush Fight—Origin of Squatting—Curious Experiences of New Settlers—How Land may be Acquired Cheaply—Aberigines of Australia—Accounts of New Zealand—Aberigines of New Zealand—Facts Relating to them,.....	PAGE 48
--	------------

CHAPTER IV.

SQUATTING.

Rapid Appropriation of Territory—How Fortunes are Made and Land Acquired—A Hundred Miles of Land Acquired by One Pioneer—Queensland Squatting—Squattage Right—Runs and Blocks—Laws affecting Grazing—Value of Stations—Gold Discovery—Unstocked Runs—Destructive Effects of the Scottish Thistle—Sheep Scab—Stamping Out Disease—Farm Servants—House Accommodation—Cattle and Sheep Stations—Schoolmasters and Physicians—Founding of Townships—Camp Followers—Squattage Homes—Land and Land Legislation—Absenteeism and Resident Squatters—Details of Squatting,.....	103
--	-----

CHAPTER V.

GOLD-DIGGING.

Distribution of Gold—Prospecting—A Rush—Life at the Diggings—Modes of Searching—Different Kinds of Gold—A Persistent Digger—Quartz Rocks—Diamonds and Precious Stones—An English Gold-Mining Company Exploding unnecessarily—Gold Escort—Lucky Diggers—Old Convict Diggers—Wandering and Unsettled Life at the Diggings—American Notions—American Traders—A Cargo of Coffins—Chinese Diggers and Chinese Swindlers—Introduction and Permanence of Gold-Digging—Unsatisfactory Mode of Life of Diggers,.....	142
---	-----

CHAPTER VI.

SHEPHERDING.

	PAGE
The Shepherd's Mode of Life—Easy Way of Earning a Livelihood— Hutkeepers and Families—Resources for those Unaccustomed to Manual Labour—Wages—Rations—A Commercial Traveller and an Expatriated Irish Landlord—Shepherding a Stepping- Stone to a Better Position—A Lucky Irishman—Newly-Arrived Emigrants—Scottish Highlanders in Trouble—Encamping out,..	173

CHAPTER VII.

LOST IN THE BUSH.

Bush Directions to Travellers—Bush of Australia and Bush of New Zealand—Died of Starvation—Riding in a Circle—Lost Travellers —A Traveller Gone Mad—Bush Prescription for Preventing Loss of Travellers—Short Cuts and Hairbreadth Escapes—Marked Tree Line—Death of a Traveller—Lost Children—Blacks Track- ing a Lost Child—A Mother and her Lost Child—Aboriginal Guides,.....	185
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

DROUGHTS AND FLOODS.

Coast and Dividing Ranges—A Drought and its Terrible Effects— Singular Origin of a Fire—Hot Winds—Agriculture in the Interior—Travelling on the Road—Sandy and Swelling Blight— Bullock Drivers—Carriers—Stockholders—Burning Grass Experience—Dams—Overstocking—Losses during the Disastrous Drought of 1865-66—Vegetables—Fall of Rain—Seasons of Droughts and Floods, and consequent Losses—Agriculture,.....	198
--	-----

CHAPTER IX.

CONVICTISM.

Caution in the Use of the Word Convict—An Incurable—Murder of a Settler—Singular Story of a Scottish Convict—Regretting not being Executed—A Bonnymuir Rebel and a Scottish Clergyman—Specials—Old Crawlers—An Edinburgh Burglar Mutilated by Natives—Tasmania—Convicts and Emigrants—A Wolf in Sheep's Clothing—A Ninevite—Pointers or Professional Swindlers—Wealthy Bushrangers and the New South Wales Government,	PAGE 213
--	-------------

CHAPTER X.

STATE AID TO RELIGION.

State Aid and Voluntaryism Applicable to Two Different States of Society—Advantages of Voluntaryism in the Colonies—Co-existing State Aid and Voluntaryism an Anomaly at the Antipodes—Government Interference and Disagreement amongst the People—A Clerical Rara Avis, Prophet, Priest, and King—Spheres of the Clergyman's Duty—Missions,.....	230
---	-----

CHAPTER XI.

DEMOCRACY AND ITS RESULTS.

A Murderer Cutting a Man's Head off—Arbitration <i>versus</i> Law—An Irish Savage and Catholic Skull Cracker—Thieves who could Murder too—A Privileged Cattle Stealer—Liberalism and its Results—Members of Parliament promoted to Inspectorships—Police—Heavy Taxation—Public Money Squandered—A Shop-keeping Chancellor of Exchequer and his Budget—The Stuff of
--

CONTENTS.

Xiii

	PAGE:
which Members of Parliament are made—Thirty Shillings a Week for Thrashing Wheat and Three Pounds for Making Laws—Radicalism and Ruin—Antecedents of a Prime Minister—A Queen's Counsel opposed for Parliament by an Itinerant Lecturer on Phrenology—Singular Land Legislation—Responsible Government and Debt—Two Men Cooks Elevated to the Judicial Bench—Extracts from Lectures Delivered in Sydney by the Author on the New South Wales Land Act,.....	211



AUSTRALIA AS IT IS.

CHAPTER I.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

CHINESE EXPEDIENTS FOR COMMUNICATING INFORMATION TO CHINESE SETTLERS — REASONS FOR EMIGRANTS REFRAINING FROM LETTER WRITING—PRECARIOUS CONDITION OF NEW SETTLERS—CAUTIOUS GOLD-DIGGERS—AUSTRALIA, TASMANIA, AND NEW ZEALAND—MISTAKES OF EMIGRANTS IN NOT ASCERTAINING THE DISTRICTS SUITABLE FOR THEM—A LOCAL GOVERNOR'S ADVICE—COTTON GROWING—MANNERS AND CUSTOMS—PECULIARITIES AND UNCERTAINTIES OF COLONIAL LEGISLATION.

ON one occasion I entered a shepherd's hut, which formed one of the numerous out-stations of a large grazing establishment, and found a Chinaman, who acted as hutkeeper, busily engaged in reading a Chinese volume. Having signified a desire to be informed as to the nature of the contents of it, and of a number of other Chinese books which lay beside him, he replied in

English, 'All this country this Chinaman write—other Chinamen write—all write China,' pointing at the same time in every direction around him, and finally in the direction of China. In traversing bush tracks, and the main lines of roads, one not unfrequently sees trees which have been neatly stripped of their bark a few feet above the ground, with Chinese characters carefully written in ink on the white surface—one of the many expedients resorted to by Chinamen with the object of communicating information to their countrymen, and saving them from loss and disappointment. A volume of letters of recent dates, from some of those observant foreigners who, engaged in different pursuits, have settled in different parts, would probably be one of the best handbooks of Australia which could be published. Not the least of the writer's objects in the following chapters is to give a trustworthy view of life and manners, for the guidance of those who may be interested in the subject. What is true of one place may not be true of another place, and what is true at one time may not be true at another time; and the fitful changes—periods of prosperity alternating with periods of depression, which have unfortunately been of frequent occurrence in the Australian colonies—are very unfavourable to letter-writing—hence much of the uncertainty which exists in the public mind as to the real condition of society in those regions. A carpenter told me that on his arrival at a large seaport town, which happened at the time to be in a most flourishing condi-

tion, he obtained employment at the rate of twenty-five shillings a day, or half-a-crown an hour. The climate was agreeable, beef was sold at one penny per lb., and Australia seemed to him to be a very land of Goshen. He wrote to inform his comrades at home of his good fortune, with the object of inducing them to follow his footsteps; but he deeply regretted afterwards that he had done so, for his letter had not reached the equator when he was thrown out of employment, and instead of receiving half-a-crown an hour, he could not get employment at any rate of wages. He made a shift—as many are obliged to do when hands of their own craft are too numerous—and became a gardener. A treacherous dependence may be sometimes placed on first impressions; and the shame of having to contradict themselves—to say that they were altogether wrong in what they had previously written—leads many emigrants to forego correspondence. The affections are very apt to go along with the interests—new ties of friendship are formed, old ties are broken; and there are those who *forget*—those, too, always very numerous, who wait '*to-morrow* and *to-morrow*,' to write more favourable intelligence. To-morrow, with its favourable intelligence, does not come, and they do not write. One young man, who had emigrated very much against the will of his parents, said to me that he had not written to them for seven years. In his case it would have been rather disagreeable to have written to state how he

was situated, as he had resigned a good situation in Glasgow, and was not receiving one-sixth part of the salary which he had been in receipt of at home. He wrote at last, but, like many others, not until he felt himself justified in doing so—that is, when his pecuniary circumstances were more favourable. The spirit of commercial enterprise is so much abroad—the arts of money-making are so numerous, and the power of self-interest is so strong—that failing the aids supplied in trustworthy correspondence, no alternative would seem to be left to newly-arrived emigrants but to grope their way. When a new gold-field—regarding which flattering accounts may have been circulated in the newspapers—has been discovered, the more experienced and better-informed diggers employ and pay a party of reliable persons to visit it and furnish a report—a fact of some significance, proving the necessity for caution on the part of intending settlers.

Every one who has been resident in any of the Australian colonies very soon becomes familiar, however, with the leading local characteristic features—some things standing out very prominently, and distinguishing one quarter from another. The first colony in the line of the overland mail from England, and calling at King George's Sound, is—

WESTERN AUSTRALIA—Capital, Perth.—It has a large unexplored interior, and, being a penal settlement, labour is cheap, with everything as in the days of yore in New South Wales.

SOUTH AUSTRALIA—Capital, Adelaide.—Mouth of the river Murray, draining the interior of Victoria, New South Wales, and Queensland, navigable for 2000 miles, dividing with Queensland the present right to and interest in the projected new colony of North Australia. Products—wheat, copper, and wool.

VICTORIA — Capital, Melbourne. — ‘Go-a-head’ population. Products—wool and gold. Distinguished by manhood suffrage and political troubles.

NEW SOUTH WALES—Capital, Sydney.—Fine harbour. Parent of all the other colonies. Products—coal, oranges, wool, and gold. Is also distinguished by manhood suffrage and political troubles.

QUEENSLAND—Capital, Brisbane.—The latest formed colony. Warm climate. Products—pine apples and turtles. Squatting is in the ascendant. There are great facilities for occupation of the territory, and an abundant supply of labour under the land-order system.

TASMANIA (Van Dieman’s Land)—Principal towns, Launceston, Hobart Town.—English climate and English hedgerows. Products—potatoes, oats, and apples.

NEW ZEALAND, though about the same size as Great Britain, extends over 13 degrees of latitude. There are very considerable differences in the climate of one place from another—the southern extremity being cold, the northern warm. There are about sixty thousand natives, usually called ‘Maories,’ in New Zealand, and of this number there are not more than five thousand

in the middle island, where Southland, Otago, Canterbury, and Nelson are situated. The northern island, the principal settlements in which are Auckland, Wellington, and New Plymouth, being warmer than the middle island, is preferred by the Maories, as it would also seem to be by the European residents.

More enlarged observation and better acquaintance with the Australian colonies would have convinced some of the latter with whom I met in the southern settlements in New Zealand, where I had gone in 1850 on a health-seeking excursion, that they had committed serious mistakes in settling there. Such places as Southland and Otago are not at all adapted for persons who suffer from pulmonary complaints, in consequence of the frequent rains and cold south-westerly winds, and those emigrants ought to have gone to the high upland parts of Australia in the gold-digging regions, where the climate is more favourable, where they could have obtained employment easily at remunerative rates, and would not have been required to do manual labour at sheep stations. A great deal has been said of the healthiness of the Australian climate; this must be understood, however, to apply chiefly to the high mountainous parts of the interior, where the atmosphere is very rare, dry, pure, and warm. Along the coast, and in low-lying parts of country, the atmosphere is much denser; stifling heats prevail, and some affections, such as dyspepsia, might be aggravated instead of being relieved in such places. The seats of com-

merce and large towns would seem to be far more favourably adapted to those—such as clerks—who have been accustomed to the occupations of town life, than the embryo agricultural settlements. Those settlements, always bidding high for public favour, are in need of a different class of emigrants. The consumption of exciseable commodities by those persons amply reimburses the government for the expenses incurred in granting them free passages. The advantages to the labouring class are certainly great when they find employment at high wages. Those who are in possession of small, carefully accumulated capital, generally require, however, to be cautious as to the mode of investment. ‘Don’t trust any one; judge for yourself. Look at two sides of a shilling,’ were the words which I heard spoken by the superintendent, or local governor, of one of the New Zealand settlements, to two young men who had entered into conversation with him regarding their intentions of settling. Ignorance may be ruinous. There are many most important things to be learned on the spot, a knowledge of which cannot be very well dispensed with, for in Australia, as elsewhere, instead of the man overcoming the difficulties, the difficulties may overcome the man. ‘Two are better than one;’ and the term ‘mates’ is a very favourite expression, well understood by all experienced colonists. The human heart was formed for friendship, and, generally speaking, it will not be found good on the part of either individuals or families to be

alone in Australia. There is very little to be said about the old and established settlements, the population of towns, and those in the neighbourhood who are engaged in agriculture, in vine and in tobacco growing. In those places channels for labour and industry have been opened up and very clearly defined, indicating to emigrants the safest course to follow. In newly formed settlements, however, there are often difficulties in the way of ascertaining the proper season for the sowing of grain, and the kind of cultivation suitable to the locality. A 'land-order' emigrant in Queensland told me that a friend of his had sustained great loss from these difficulties. After much labour and expense in clearing and trenching ground, and in planting it with fruit trees, they died in spite of every available precaution. In a more elevated part of Queensland, and in a sheltered situation, there would have been less risk of a loss of this nature, however. What may be grown with advantage in one place may not be grown with equal advantage in another. Wheat and maize are the two cereals most extensively cultivated. In all the hot districts they are liable, however, to be attacked by the weevil in stack or in bin, the cold in winter not being sufficient to check the ravages of that much dreaded insect. Australia being of very great extent, there is a variety of climate, and climate will always determine the kind, as well as the mode of agricultural industry to be adopted. There was a great deal of good sense in a Sydney merchant with whom

I met, who had brought 500 coolies from India in one ship, with the object of cultivating cotton on his land in Queensland. Coolies would be much more likely to succeed as labourers in a cotton plantation than English, Scottish, or Irish immigrants. Besides, they can live very cheaply on rice and sugar. The following extract from the editorial article of a Queensland newspaper, if not conclusive, contains some truth on the subject of cotton growing :—

‘Instead of cotton cultivation increasing in proportion to the increase in our population, it has decreased, and now, after six years’ trial, there seems less probability than ever of its soon taking its place with our wool, hides, and tallow, as one of the large staple products of the colony. The public companies which were started for the purpose of cultivating cotton in Queensland under the stimulus of choice land on easy terms, and a government bonus on the cotton produced, have all either become insolvent, or have given up the cultivating of cotton; and of all the small farmers who commenced with the cultivation of cotton four or five years ago, scarcely one can now be found who has a single plant, except it be in his garden as a curiosity.’

The squatting, or grazing, cattle-breeding, wool-growing parts of the country—Australia proper—have many characteristics in common, and the observations of the writer have a wide general application in relation to those districts. There are many things in Australia, as elsewhere, for which no reason whatever can be given, and it is sometimes rather idle and unprofitable to inquire for a reason. Manners and customs operating in a coun-

try, and regulating the conduct of its people, ultimately attain the force of law, and it is for the advantage of every one interested to be made acquainted with them. It was not in the bond—it was not according to the letter, that those who went and took possession of the unoccupied lands should hold those lands in perpetuity, and claim rights to them almost tantamount to purchase in fee simple. The words in the bond were, that the land was to be taken from them when required for agriculture. Very, very little, indeed, will ever be required for agriculture; and the majority of the occupants of the land, who are called squatters, are not likely to be much interfered with in their possession, so long as they continue to pay the small rental to government with which they are charged. They have acquired a right to the land by discovery or by occupation. ‘Possession,’ it is said, ‘is nine points of the-law,’ and use and wont—King-custom—rules rampant. The present occupant may not have discovered the land, but he paid very highly for his right of occupation to the previous occupant, who, if *he* did not discover the land, also paid for *his* right of occupation. There was a district in New South Wales which was sold in this way, without a sheep, horse, or hoof of cattle upon it, for £40,000—sold, not by the government, but by one private person to another. Grievances arise, and always will arise, from such questions where population increases. Smith cannot see the fairness of *his* buying land at twenty

shillings per acre, whilst his neighbour, Thomson, retains possession of twenty, sixty, or one hundred thousand acres, and does not pay one penny per acre of rental. More than one penny might be paid, however, in Victoria, and less in Queensland. Thomson has undoubtedly the best of it; his land requires no fencing, ploughing, or sowing, for there is an excellent crop of natural grass upon it. But Smith, after all, has not much good ground for complaint. There is plenty of unoccupied territory, and if he desires the advantages of Thomson, he has only to do as Thomson or his predecessor did—go and ‘take up country,’ or, what one Smith cannot do, ten Smiths can accomplish—purchase a station, of which there are many for sale.

The larger number of mankind are born to live on trust, and to think little of the laws by which they are to be governed, save how to obey them. They leave legislation to the study and occupation of those who have leisure for the task—to those whose presumably superior wisdom and intelligence they would much rather confide in than their own; and it is very annoying to many poor struggling emigrants, looking out for the means of subsistence for themselves and their families, to find that no sooner have they set their feet on the shores of Australia, in Victoria, and in New South Wales, than they are instantly installed politicians, called on to give their votes for a member of Parliament, and often to express opinions on matters of which they actually know nothing. Indeed, it would

seem to be necessary for one's safety and security to study colonial politics. A member of the New South Wales Parliament, whose hospitality I frequently enjoyed, said to me on one occasion, in self-congratulation, 'I knew what was coming—I have sold out.' All the people cannot be members of Parliament, and all have not the opportunities which this gentleman had of hearing that the newly-elected liberal representatives, and those who were at the helm of state, intended at that time to reduce the value of all the best land in the colony, and that land for which he had paid £1, £2, and £4 per acre, would soon not be worth more than five shillings per acre. Other highly disturbing changes frequently take place. A diminution in the revenue occasions an alteration in the tariff; there is an imposition of new duties, and merchants, if they will not suffer loss, must watch political movements. Bankers also, and indeed every class in the community, are involved in those changes, for politics reach to, and often shake, the foundation of the whole fabric of colonial society.

CHAPTER II.

THE BUSH.

FIRST SIGHT OF AUSTRALIA—PHYSICAL OUTLINES AND CONFIGURATION—EASTERN AND WESTERN FALLS OF THE WATER—CLIMATE—QUEENSLAND—VEGETATION—BIRDS, WILD AND DOMESTIC—FISH—WILD ANIMALS—REPTILES—FRUITS, INDIGENOUS AND EUROPEAN—ENGLISH VEGETABLES—ATMOSPHERIC PECULIARITIES AND PHENOMENA—DIVERSITY OF COUNTRY AND CLIMATE—OCCUPATION OF THE LAND—GEOLOGICAL WONDERS—ALLIGATORS—NEW DISCOVERIES.

‘Bush’ is the name given to the natural forest or uncleared land, of which there is much, especially along the coast, extending considerable distances inland, characterised by dense vegetation. In the interior, however, there is very little to be met with, the country generally presenting a park-like appearance, with ridges, hills, valleys, and mountains covered with grass, dotted here and there with trees. On the first sight of Australia seaward, a *vastness* discovers itself in hill ranges and high mountain peaks which appear in the far distance, in many directions, and the view thus obtained, though very extensive, is dull, heavy, and

monotonous. All the land seems to be covered with trees, and there are no green hills or parts of country entirely clear of timber, to relieve the eye from the oppressive, dusky, and sombre shade of the Australian forest.

The similitude of Australia, in its great physical outlines and configuration, to the *dropping from a cow*, though very homely, is not a bad illustration. There is greater or less unevenness on the surface beginning at the coast, with its irregular and ill-defined ridges, hills, valleys, and mountains, then there is a gradual steepness of ascent, in travelling towards the interior; and this steepness continues till the Australian Alps are reached—ranges of high hills and mountains running parallel to the coast, at elevations of two, three, and four thousand feet above the level of the sea. Passing beyond the Australian Alps, there is a descent, though scarcely perceptible, into the interior. The climate here is warmer; the country more level and more thinly wooded than the quarter which has its fall of water to the coast. The *eastern* and *western falls of the water* are well understood—the eastern being the fall of the water into the ocean, the western the fall of the water into the large basin of the interior, of which the River Murray at Adelaide, navigable for some hundreds of miles, is the great outlet. All the other rivers are navigable only for very short distances.

There are great differences in the climate according to latitude, elevation, and situation. In regard to

latitude, a mountain in Queensland, for example, may be as high as a mountain in Victoria or in New South Wales, and whilst there will be snow in winter on the mountain in Victoria, and on the one in New South Wales, there will be none on the one in Queensland; the last place being farther north and nearer the tropics. There are some parts of Queensland which are extremely hot in summer; too much so, one would think, for the English constitution. There are other parts, again, in high mountainous districts which are very agreeable, where the heat is not felt to be so oppressive. There are always cooling sea-breezes blowing a long way inland, and in the high upland districts, the pure balmy atmosphere is most delicious all the year round. Even in the interior during the hottest days in summer, a gentle westerly wind generally commences about ten o'clock every morning, tempering the great heat of the rays of the sun; serving as a fan, and drying, as it were, all the perspiration on the body, so that one would never seem to perspire, unless he is engaged in manual labour, or is exerting himself, as in riding. This is not the case in lowland parts, however, such as those near the coast, the atmosphere there being much denser. The nights in hot districts in Queensland are frequently extremely cold, and the days extremely warm. The two great extremes of cold and heat would not seem, however, to be prejudicial to health. The climate is very dry, and catarrh and many other diseases are almost unheard of.

Botany Bay was a very appropriate name for the part of Australia which was first discovered, for that region is thickly covered with large flowering shrubs, of a varied and beautiful character; but the whole continent might well admit of the designation, 'Botany Land.' There seems to be an endless variety of vegetation, differing in different parts of country according to climate, soil, and situation; and the economy of nature is very striking, every quarter being occupied by, and appropriated to, the growth of some description of vegetation suitable to the locality, and found nowhere else. In a temperature and soil, for instance, similar to those of New Zealand, the ground is thickly covered with fern, including the tree fern, and the cabbage tree. In the great variety of climate there is a corresponding variety in the forms of the vegetable world, and what may be found in one place will not be found in another. One of the greatest hopes of the graziers in New Zealand is the naturalisation and the rapid diffusion of English grasses. There is nothing of this kind wanted in Australia, however, as it is already stocked with natural grasses, of sorts exactly suited to the particular districts in which they are found growing. English and other grasses have been introduced, and some of these, as the white clover, may be found growing most luxuriantly in alluvial spots. It only grows, however, for a very short period, the great heat and dryness of the climate being unfavourable to spreading. The natural grasses strike their roots

deeply into the soil and are very hardy; though exception might perhaps be taken to them in many places where they appear to be tufty, thickly spread, and not covering all the surface, whilst they are liable to be seriously injured by over-stocking. This is not so much the result of the nature of the grasses as the faults of the soil and of the climate, as in more favourable situations the land is thickly matted with grass, and over-stocking would seem to benefit instead of injuring it. It is not merely grass, however, but a great variety of nutritious herbs, upon which sheep, cattle, and horses are dependent for pasturage. During a day's journey over the open pasturage land of New Zealand, one might see little else than stunted flax and fern tussock, grass and anise plant. During a day's journey over some of the pasturage land in Australia, however, one would see wild flax, the same as that which is cultivated in Great Britain; wild tares, wild oats, wild hops, trefoil, chicory, cammomile, sarsaparilla, horehound, daisies, buttercups, hyacinths, violets, wild carrots, parsnips, and an innumerable variety of other vegetables. It would be futile to attempt to give any general description, however, as one part of the country differs so greatly from another, whilst what is found in one place may not be found in another. An astonishing variety of vegetable life is certainly one of the great leading physical characteristics of Australia, but one must travel far and wide to be made acquainted with this fact; and it does certainly appear most remarkable, that amid the apparently endless

variety of vegetation, poisonous plants are rarely heard of. In some parts of South Australia, the *tute*, so annoying to sheep-farmers in New Zealand, is found; but with this solitary exception, no one ever hears of sheep or cattle dying from poisonous plants in Australia.

It is a beautiful arrangement of Divine Providence, and a good illustration of the special care of Him who doeth all things well, that in a part of the world of his creation, liable to severe droughts and want of seasonable showers of rain, a special remedy should have been provided to meet the want, and a kind of coverlet should be made altogether of a singular texture, to be thrown over the land to protect it, and thus to render it adapted for the purpose in the great design of its creation. Had all the human beings since the creation of the world been employed in digging, trenching, casting up large mounds of earth mixed with stone, gravel, and boulders of rock, to prevent the soil from being washed away by floods, the whole sown with nutritious grasses, and finally planted all over with trees to prevent the grasses from being scorched and burnt up to the roots by the fierce heat of the sun's rays, it never could have been done so well as it has been done by the great Creator. The trees which are spread all over the land are just of a kind specially adapted to give covering and shelter to the grasses without destroying them. They are ever-green, and the most prevailing kind of them shed their bark and not their leaves; not their whole bark, but the outer layer, like the scarf-

skin of the human body. The leaves are of a narrow elongated shape, of hard gummy texture, and they all droop down towards the earth: the heat of the rays of the sun in passing through them and the trees' spangled branches, is thus broken, and genially tempered to the tender grasses underneath. The value of these Australian trees for shelter has been appreciated by the sheep-farmers in New Zealand, who are importing seed of the gum trees—which grow very rapidly and to a large size—and planting part of their farms with them; the pasturage land in New Zealand often resembling the bleak bare hills of Scotland. The timber is valueless for cabinet-making purposes, however. In some places a considerable distance from the coast there are clumps of forest to be met with, similar to the forest in New Zealand, which contain a large variety of hardwood trees, pine, rosewood, satin-wood, cedar, and many others which for cabinet-making purposes, are quite as good timber as any which can be found in New Zealand. In the interior there is nothing of this kind, and the only serviceable wood for building and fencing are the 'stringy and ironback: failing these, the box. The ironback, as its name denotes, is an exceedingly hard and durable description of wood. There are similar hardwood trees along the coast, and small pieces of them form a considerable article of export to Great Britain for the use of ship-builders. The so-called cherry-tree, with the stone outside, resembles a large shrub of the pine species, having small red berries upon it, like the

pine-trees in New Zealand. The myall is in great repute for making handles for stockwhips; it is very close grained, highly scented, and never grows to a large size: cattle are very fond of eating the leaves, and, as a consequence, 'Myall country' is usually considered first-class. The apple-tree, so named from the leaves bearing some resemblance to the leaves of the ordinary apple-tree, is the only other tree for the leaves of which, cattle and horses would seem to have any liking. There are many of the trees oddly named, and their names are sometimes calculated to mislead. The oak resembles a pine-tree, and is never found save where there is water, by the side of a creek or a river. The honeysuckle is a tree, and would appear to have received the name from its deep green and shining leaves.

'Limestone ranges,' 'box,' 'myall,' 'apple-tree,' 'salt-bush,' 'gum and stringy bark,' 'plains,' and many other names are seen in the advertisements of 'runs' for sale. There is one general description applicable to the whole, they are thinly covered with trees, and the plains are not an exception to this. There may be plains, and of very considerable extent, without trees, where the mirage beguiles the wearied traveller, but they bear no proportion to the country described as *plains* which have trees growing upon them. There are scrubs occurring in some places; those on the eastern side dividing range, visited by the coast rains, from which the cedar and other highly prized wood is obtained, are dark, dense, and impenetrable forests, surpassing anything of

the kind to be met with in New Zealand, containing countless varieties of plants, bushes, and trees, like some epitome of the whole vegetable kingdom, differing in the luxuriance of growth from aught found elsewhere, and seeming as if a part of Borneo or some other tropical region had been transferred to Australia. Many of the trees, as cedar, pine, and rosewood, are of gigantic proportions. Parasitical and creeping plants are very numerous, and the wild vine hangs down in festoons so much woven and interwoven in the branches of the trees, that entrance into one of the scrubs is impossible without the aid of a hatchet, and even with this auxiliary it is not very safe for the uninitiated to attempt an entrance. In addition to the risk from snakes there is a nettle-tree which has been fatal to horses and cattle which may have come in contact with it, and it would not likely be less sparing of a man's face or hands. There are *bricklow scrubs* in some parts of the northern interior, much complained of by recent pioneers as a harbour for blacks, and occasioning great difficulty in getting the cattle out of them when they are wanted. Scrubs are of rare occurrence, however, and it is very seldom that they are heard of as impeding the operations of the grazier.

One is very apt to imagine that families dwelling far apart from each other in the pastoral districts, three, four, six, or eight miles, must be liable to suffer and be distressed by a painful feeling of solitariness. This is rarely the case, however; at least I never knew of

any one making the complaint. Persons who are out with their flocks of sheep from morning to night, from one year's end to another, may indeed frequently complain, but they always look forward to a more settled mode of life when they have earned sufficient pecuniary means to establish themselves in a township, and follow the occupation to which they had been originally accustomed. There is a great deal in the topographical features of the country and its teeming abundance of life to amuse, interest, and relieve the mind of the feeling of loneliness which might otherwise prey deeply upon it. The adaptation of external nature to the human mind is here wonderfully manifested. There is a *largeness, openness, and sincerity* in its natural aspect, every part being distinctly marked and visible in the pure gleaming sunshine. There are no dark dells, places of concealment for the mind to conjure up objects to alarm; and there is no want of the most cheerful and innocent companions in innumerable feathered songsters, from the early dawn of the morning to the setting of the sun. It is said that the birds of Australia do not sing, that they merely chirp and chatter. Some of them chant most hilarious notes like the tinkling of bells. The 'laughing jackass' is a prodigy, giving out unexpectedly a loud uproarious noise sufficient to awaken the 'Seven sleepers.' Many of the birds are of the same type as those of Great Britain; some, however, varying a little in their plumage. There is the domestic pet, the robin, with the wren, wagtail,

crow, curlew, plover, and snipe. There are also the harbingers of spring and summer in the several varieties of swallows, and the cuckoo. The cuckoo is only heard at night. There are bats, owls, and hawks in great abundance, and the mountain pheasant or lyre bird, which however is rare. The eagle hawk is very large, and destructive to young lambs: there is one species of pure white colour. There are many varieties of pigeons; one is very small, being about the size of a house sparrow: it is seldom that more than two or three are seen together; and there are no large flocks of them such as are seen in the forests of New Zealand. The fleshy berries with which the pine-trees are there covered furnish them with the greatest abundance of food, and they do not appear to have the enemies there which they have in Australia. The macaw, a large black parrot, and the quail, seem to be the only two birds exactly alike in the two countries, with this remarkable difference—the macaw in New Zealand is very tame, permitting one to come near and kill it; at least I know that one permitted me to approach it: but in Australia it is exceedingly wild—said indeed to be untameable. There are some large birds in New Zealand which do not fly, and some of singular habits, as the mutton bird, which burrow holes in sandy places in the ground. The natives have their seasons for catching them, and adopt ingenious methods of preserving them when killed, for future use, by the use of their fat and aromatic herbs. There is the robin, too, in New Zealand, where it is

very tame. Whilst travelling, one perched itself on my shoulder. There are many other birds of hallowed associations which make the forest resound with mirth and melody. The most remarkable perhaps is the 'tui,' or 'parson bird;' the latter name having been given it in consequence of its being jet black, and having two small white feathers like a clergyman's bands hanging out from its breast. It is of the same size as the blackbird, and is the most noisy of all the New Zealand birds. There are parrots in New Zealand, but not in any proportion to the very great variety which exist in Australia. The climate in Australia being so widely different, there is a corresponding difference in animal life. Among the birds, the most prevalent are parrots. The large white parrot-cockatoos are always seen in flocks, and are great pests to the farmers. The greatest favourite is the magpie, which may always be observed hopping about the door of a dwelling, piping out a long carol of friendly salutations. Of the wild turkey, more properly the bustard, one seldom sees more than two together. The brush turkey, very like the Norfolk, but much smaller, and found in the scrubs in hot districts, is very remarkable for laying a large quantity of eggs, for covering them with leaves and sand, and leaving the sun to hatch them. The emu is nearly as large as an ostrich, to which it bears some resemblance, but it is dark in colour; it lays about a dozen eggs, and hatches them in the same way as domestic fowls. Large numbers of them may be seen together; they do not

fly, and owe their safety to their fleetness in running. A stroke from one of their feet will stun, if not kill a dog which may attempt to seize it. The native companion is a gigantic crane, which is very easily tamed, but it is dangerous for children who may come near, as it has been known to make a sudden dart with its long narrow bill at their eyes. It evidently takes great delight in companionship, and flocks of them may be seen often together, where there is plenty of water, employed—as one would very readily say—in amusing themselves, fluttering about, chattering, and performing antics. The pelican and black swan are often seen sailing with great gravity amongst numbers of other waterfowl in the sheets of water in the courses of the rivers in the interior. Wild geese are of migratory habits, and are only seen occasionally. Wild ducks are very plentiful, and abound everywhere in the rivers, creeks, and lagoons. The aborigines adopt a curious method of catching them, which borders strongly on the ridiculous. Covering his head with a green sod, a native quietly swims towards and drops in amongst a flock, lays quick hold of one's feet, pulls the fowl under the surface of the water, despatches it there, and carries on the work of death in this way till nought remains save the dead bodies floating on the surface. There are also wood ducks, which are so-called in consequence of their roosting on trees at night. They are very abundant in some places, and are not easily distinguished from common wild ducks. The musk duck, which smells

very strongly of musk, has the bill of a duck, cannot fly, like its co-partner, the widely-celebrated water mole, which forms the connecting link between birds and beasts; it always dives under water when any one approaches it, but it soon rises again.

There is the greatest abundance of cod-fish in the deep parts of the rivers in the interior, and this forms one of the principal means of subsistence of the aborigines, who are very expert in spearing them—whilst catching them with hook and bait serves as a very agreeable and profitable pastime to their white brethren. Where there are no cod-fish, as in the eastern falls of the water, plenty of eels are usually found.

The kangaroo and opossum have a right of precedence over all the class *mammalia*, as they supply the aborigines with food. They would appear to be found everywhere. They are remarkable, as all others of this class are, for carrying their young in pouches beneath their belly. Kangaroos may be observed sometimes in unfrequented parts of the country in considerable numbers together, quietly browsing like a small herd of deer. They are very easily frightened, and if any of the females have young beside them when danger is apprehended, they instantly put them, by means of their small fore-feet, into their pouch, or the young leap in themselves, when the former hasten away, not running, but leaping—sometimes incredibly long distances, as if they were actually flying, over fallen trees, rocks, and gullies. When chased by dogs, and hard pressed, the females

carrying young take them from their pouches and drop them on the ground. They are very harmless; but it is scarcely safe to come to close quarters with some of the males, which are called 'old men.' In one instance, which came under the writer's notice, a gentleman possessed of sixty thousand sheep, narrowly escaped being drowned by an 'old man.' It was rather amusing to this gentleman to cry 'hilloo' to his kangaroo dogs when hunting—all the amusement ceased, however, when an old male came leap, leaping towards him, clutched him round the waist with its forefeet, and commenced hop, hopping away with him to a large water-hole to drown him :—a well-known and dangerous practice which kangaroos have of fighting their enemies. He cried out lustily, as he might under the circumstances be very well excused for doing, and the faithful dogs came to his rescue. The hind-feet are the kangaroos' weapons of defence, and being possessed of immense muscular strength, they will rip up a dog at one stroke, and they very frequently do so. The wallaby is a smaller kind of kangaroo, and harbours amongst rocks. As it does no harm, there being plenty of grass for it to eat, there is always pleaded in apology for the cruel sport of killing it, 'the tail to make soup,' the only part of the carcase which is used by the white Nimrods.

The opossum is the great article of dietary of the aborigines; it is also much valued by them, as it is sometimes by the settlers, for the sake of its skin,

which is used for making opossum cloaks and blankets. It is not much larger than a good-sized rabbit. It is found in hollow trees, which the aborigines may be always observed narrowly scanning for marks of the claws of the animal's feet. It subsists on blades of trees, but it is very partial to maize and fruit, and multiplies with astonishing rapidity when these are in the vicinity. The flying foxes and squirrels, in hot districts, are charged with a great amount of depredation. All those animals are nocturnal, and, like other night prowlers, escape the just reward of their misdeeds, by coming out of their hiding-places at night, and never being seen during the day. There are a large number of creatures of which very little is known, and there are many peculiar to certain places. They are all of small size, with the exception of the wombat, or native bear, an animal which burrows holes in the ground, and lives on leaves of trees—a kind of sloth, but resembling a bear; it is very harmless, however, as are all the others.

The native cat is a beautiful speckled little creature, but unfortunately it has nothing save its beauty to recommend it; it is the great devastator of poultry yards, and the source of much vexation, loss, and grief to housewives. There is a large tiger-cat, but it is rarely seen. The native dog deserves all the bad names which are given to it. If in killing a sheep it would content itself by satisfying its hunger in feeding upon it, like the lion, there would not be much to be said against it. The native dog never does this,

however, and the whole pleasure it would seem to have is in destruction, in the biting, maiming, and worrying of as many as possible. It is a pity it should ever have been called a dog, as it bears a much closer resemblance to a wolf or a jackal; it howls and does not bark. It has nothing of the cunning of the fox—takes bait very readily in small enclosures, and the liberal use of strychnine in bits of meat, in places which they are seen to frequent, has resulted in almost a total riddance of the grievous pest in some places. In consequence of sheep being always kept closely in hand during the day, the shepherd following them attentively, whilst they are watched during the night, the opportunities for the native dog to attack sheep are strictly guarded against. It is very different with young calves, however. A cow conceals its calf when newly dropped, and before it is able to follow. It is when thus concealed that the native dog gains the advantage of falling upon it as prey. There would never seem to be any danger of a native dog killing a calf alongside its mother, and a native dog attempting to do it is one of the grandest sights in nature. The loud, distressing lowing of the cow, when danger is thus threatened to her calf, is a signal to the whole of the herd within hearing to come to her assistance. The signal of distress is answered in a loud bellowing by all the cattle within hearing, and is despatched, as it were, in telegraphic calls, far and wide. On, on they all rush to the cow and calf at a most terrific pace—roaring

and bellowing the while, heedless, apparently, of their own safety in leaping over fallen trees and gullies, and as much infuriated as if a stream of liquid fire were passing through their veins. The best appointed army in the world would not withstand the onset of one of these herds of cattle, as thousands may be collected, in hastening to the rescue of a calf from the attack of a native dog.

Lizards and guanas are very numerous; and, speaking of them as one species, they may be seen from two to three inches, to two to three feet in length. The smaller ones live upon flies and other insects—the larger upon mice, other vermin, and young birds. There is one very large kind, like a miniature alligator, having rather a formidable appearance; it seems to live chiefly on vermin, but may be observed very frequently climbing trees, like some of the others, in search of birds' nests. They are all very harmless—torpid in winter—and, like the snakes, are never seen save in the summer months.

Every one very soon learns to take care during summer where he places his foot on the ground, especially when treading on grass, which one does with all the horror that is entertained of snakes, and a kind of patriotic sentiment is evinced in always endeavouring to kill every one of those reptiles which may be seen. The unvarying tale, if the valorous exploit of having killed one is performed, is that it was a 'big one'—always a *big* one—just as we talk of a big rat. There is one thing

for which snakes deserve some commendation, they always strive to get out of the way, but, if trampled upon, they will bite, in which case it is not so much their fault as the fault of the trampler. Instances of persons being bitten by them are of rare occurrence, however, in consequence of every one being on his guard against them, and the almost universal practice of travelling on horseback. They are very prolific, but the system of always burning the grass when it will burn, in addition to bush-fires, serves to keep them down. They have holes in the ground, in dead trees, and in the rocks; they prey upon frogs, lizards, mice, and birds; they sometimes go in search of mice and rats, and thus find their way into houses, and when they have ensconced themselves beneath the flooring, they are regarded with no very agreeable sensations. In these cases, cats are always found to be very useful in constantly keeping their eyes upon the intruder, but they never dare to approach it. Snakes are also accused of robbing hen's nests. There are several varieties of them—black, brown, diamond, carpet, whip; there are others, one of which, very rare, is about fourteen feet in length. The average length of the other kinds is about three feet. They will not move if you happen to meet their eyes first; in this way they will permit one to come near and kill them—but at the moment the eyes are taken off, they glide away. They are easily disabled by the stroke of a stick over the back, and, when thus struck, they are frequently seen to turn round and round, biting their own body.

The aborigines eat them, but it is only when they kill them themselves, as their flesh, when self-bitten, would be poisonous. The antidote of the aborigines for a snake's bite is perhaps the most effectual—scarifying or cutting with some sharp instrument the bitten part, and sucking the blood, at the same time using a tight ligature above the wound. There is something deeply significant in the gleam of a snake's eyes, which cannot be better described than as a 'ray of intelligence.' This, in reference to a repulsive body and inconceivably disgusting tail, is a figure of degradation, intelligence, and impurity meeting together, not always assented to, and not much reflected upon. A gentleman informed me that in crossing a small plain, he observed a bird whirling round and round in the air, and always coming nearer towards the earth; at last it dropped and did not rise again. On going to the place where the bird fell, there was a snake. The bird had fallen into the snake's mouth through the well-known power of fascination, one of the reptile's means of catching its prey. Bad as snakes are, they are not nearly so bad as deaf adders, as a bite from one is always supposed to be followed by death. They are about eighteen inches in length; both sting and bite, and are also known to leap. They do not move out of the way like snakes, but will permit themselves to be trodden upon; and this readily happens from their resemblance to a charred piece of wood; but fortunately, they are not very numerous, and are never seen in cold districts.

The entomologist would reap a rich harvest of delight in Australia. The whole ground and much of the vegetation in summer are literally alive with insects of very great variety, differing in different places—affording another remarkable contrast to New Zealand, where there are very few insects, and where one may lie on the ground with as little fear of them as he would on his bed. There are great numbers and varieties of centipedes. The tarantulus, a poisonous spider, and the scorpion, have no doubt some great purpose in the economy of creation here, and are useful in their place. The greatest amount of harm the insects would seem to do is to create an uneasy feeling whilst resting one's-self on the ground, which it is almost impossible to do without the knowledge of the certainty of smothering hundreds of them. The centipede, however, is quite able to resent an injury of this kind. In lifting firewood fear is always entertained of some poisonous insect.

Ants are spread all over the surface, and they live as if they claimed to be the sole and rightful owners of the soil. The branches of the highest trees are not exempt from their excursions and marauding expeditions. There are many varieties of them, one of which, the soldier-ant, about an inch in length, will stand up on its hind legs, and in this threatening attitude face a man on horseback, as if disputing the right of way. They have settlements all over the bush, with paths leading to them, beaten hard and plain like a great public highway. Some of these settlements are very con-

spicuous objects; and the stranger is sadly puzzled in endeavouring to guess what they are, assuming, as they do, the form of conical-shaped mounds of red earth, occurring at intervals, some of which are as large as small hay-cocks. These are called ant-hills. There are also ant-beds of greater or less size, all teeming with life, and not much elevated above the level of the ground. There is a species which is provided with wings at a certain period, said to be females. The wings drop off after they have flown about for a short time, and the ground seems strewn with them. The ants are proverbial for their untiring labour and industry, and their thoroughfares through the bush are crowded with them going to and fro, from the early dawn of the morning till late in the evening, those returning to the settlements carrying spoil of some kind or other. In the manna country and season, they appear as if conveying bags of flour on their backs. They are the great bush scavengers, and make prey of all the dead animal matter, and all the insects which they can get hold of. Great numbers of them may be often observed engaged in a severe contest with a live butterfly or beetle, which they are careful at first to denude of the wings. Unable to draw it along the road whole, it is cut or sliced into small pieces, to admit of easy and speedy carriage. The law of co-operation seems to be well understood by them—help being always rendered where help is required—and if one of them has been unfortunate in laying hold of too large a piece

for carrying, there are always plenty ready to give a helping hand. They have evidently some means of communicating information to one another—a language of signs—and they may be frequently observed on their journeys to put their heads close together as if receiving and imparting intelligence. The very diminutive black ants are the most troublesome. They have settlements underground, and come out in myriads, when the scouts have discovered some delectable stuff, such as honey or sugar, in any part of a house. They are always seen in a line like a train of gunpowder, following one after the other, passing and repassing. Every conceivable expedient is resorted to for keeping sugar, preserves, and other sweets out of their reach. The white ant would seem to be one of the principal agents in earth-making in Australia, causing the trees to supply a vegetable mould from the trunks and branches, which is not done with the leaves. In fact, they may be very serviceable in this way, as they will make a heap of earth in a very short time. It is not so agreeable, however, when they effect a lodgment in the pine flooring, and the other timber of a finely painted and furnished dwelling-house, as they will also make a heap of dust of it.

There is a great abundance and variety of spiders, butterflies, beetles, and moths, and some of the last are very large and beautiful. Every one complains of the common house-fly being far too plentiful in summer, and a very great annoyance. The March fly, the same

as the gad-fly, is very tormenting to horses and cattle. The blow-fly occasions immense anxiety, and though a great foe to strivers after domestic economy, is a great friend of hungry dogs. It is remarkable that sheep never seem to suffer from it, not even when newly shorn, and when the Australian sheep-shearers appear almost indifferent as to shearing the skin off with the wool. No doubt the great dryness of the climate will account for this.

Mosquitoes, from the bites of which new-comers complain so much, are not much known in the interior—sandy, bushy, low-lying parts of country, where there is water, being their favourite places of resort. It is only when first bitten that their bites are attended by very disagreeable eruptions upon the hands and face. The sand-fly in New Zealand is almost as annoying, but neither of them are much worse than midges.

Grasshoppers, caterpillars, and locusts are great plagues in certain seasons in some districts, eating up the green grass and the crops of the farmer. They keep always moving in one direction, like a desolating army. It is only during seasons favourable to the hatching of their ova deposited in the earth, that they suddenly appear in such multitudes. The aphis is also a great destroyer, and a very frequent one, there being no district, and very rarely a season, exempt from its ravages. There is also many a sorrowful tale told of the ravages of the aphis in gardens.

There is a large fly called a locust, which comes out

of the ground in summer, leaving its grave cerements generally at the grave's mouth. In some districts the trees are completely covered with them, and they make a most deafening noise.

There are none of the flying insects so much deserving of notice as the bees. The native bee has no sting, is dark in colour, slender in body, and not much larger than the common house-fly. The aborigines adopt a very ingenious method of discovering their hives; catching one, which they can always readily do where there is water, they fix with gum, which is easily obtained from any of the trees beside them, a small particle of white down upon its back, let it fly away, and keep running after, holding their eyes intently upon it, till they see it alight at its hive, which is always found in a hole in an upstanding tree. One native, with a tomahawk or a stone adze in hand, cuts notches in the tree for his big toes to rest upon, and in this way making notches as he ascends, using them as steps in a ladder, and holding by the tree with one of his hands, he mounts and very speedily cuts out the honey-comb at the place where the bee was seen to enter. The bark from the knot of a tree serves for a dish to hold the comb, and it is soon devoured at one meal. Hives of English bees were regarded, until a comparatively recent period, as great curiosities. It is most surprising how fast those bees have multiplied here, and how rapidly they have spread. Farther and farther every year they are found making their way into the interior, to

the great delight of many who had not anticipated the arrival of such welcome visitants. With the countless numbers of milch kine, and the honey lodged in the trees, it almost ceases to be a figurative expression, to say of Australia, that it is 'a land flowing with milk and honey.' There are none who have benefited so much from the introduction of English bees as the shepherds and their families. Out all day with their flocks of sheep, and straggling after them amongst the trees, it is a pleasant recreation, and a profitable way of spending their superabundance of spare time, to look for the treasures of honey. There was one hut which I entered, where the man employed as hutkeeper had been very industrious in laying up a large store of it in casks for sale. The atmosphere in some quarters is strongly impregnated, at a certain season, with the smell of honey; and this is the case especially where a heath much resembling the Scottish heather abounds. The mammosa tree is one mass of sweet-scented golden blossoms and sprigs, and there are other flower-bearing trees of a larger kind, furnishing no end of pasturage for bees; the climate would also appear to be highly favourable to their increase and spreading. There are many of the trees hollow, in consequence of the destruction effected by the white ant, and these hollow up-standing trees are as excellent places of shelter for bees as they are for opossums.

The peppermint is a tree which grows to a large size, and is found only in cold regions; it is noted

for dropping the manna, an exudation from the leaves, which falls to the ground early in the season, and with which the ground underneath is strewed as with flakes of snow, or peppermint drops. It is considered to be very wholesome, and is the delight of children. There is a great abundance of it at the proper season in high upland districts. There are strawberries, currants, an uneatable orange, and pears, with varieties of small berries in the scrubs, but all are of very little account. The native currants perhaps claim some importance from being seen in great quantities in Sydney markets for sale. They are seen there in a green state, and are used in making tarts. The only really valuable wild fruit is the raspberry—more properly, the bramble—found in cold districts, and largely used by the settlers in making preserves. One seldom hears complaints of the want of fruit. The seed stones of the peach and nectarine are very easily carried, and as easily put into the ground; and the young trees grown from them will, in three or four years, produce an abundant supply of fruit. The more expeditious method, however, and the one usually practised, is to obtain young trees, which are seen in profusion in neglected gardens. Grafted young trees, when they can be obtained, are always preferred. Peach, apricot, and nectarine are the most common of imported fruit trees, and may be found near almost every dwelling. Grape cuttings and slips from fig-trees are also easily carried, and there is not much in the climate of any part of

Australia to prevent one from indulging in the anticipation of sitting under his own 'vine and fig tree.' One always requires, however, to know the nature of the climate and situation, before thinking of planting fruit trees; and the latitude of a place will not always serve as a rule for guidance. Along the coast, the climate may be very favourable for the growing of bananas, oranges, lemons, citrons, pomegranates, guavas, and loquats. In the same latitude, but at a higher elevation, the climate may be well suited for mulberries, almonds, walnuts, quinces, pears, and plums. At a higher elevation still, about two and three thousand feet above the level of the sea, and in the same latitude, the climate differs greatly, being much colder, and adapted only for the growing of English fruits and vegetables, and the gardens there are found stocked with the same varieties as those of Great Britain: apples, pears, plums, cherries, strawberries, raspberries, gooseberries, currants, peas, carrots, parsnips, radishes, leeks, onions, potatoes, cabbages, and greens. The flower plots containing the much cherished roses, dahlias, daisies, etc., resemble, if they do not surpass, equally well-attended plots in Great Britain. Pumpkins and all the melon species are easily grown, and many of them, as the rock and water melon, are good substitutes for fruit.

'What a fine country Australia would be, if provided with navigable rivers!' is a frequent remark. Yet, if there were many navigable rivers, it would not be the remarkably healthy country which it is; whilst there

would be none of that pure balmy atmosphere, which we feel to be one of the greatest luxuries of human existence. There are no stagnant marshes, or at least very few, to hold and drink in the rain as it falls to serve as feeders of streams. There are therefore no poisonous exhalations to create a miasma in the atmosphere, to breed the many ills to which flesh is heir. Slight showers of rain are not of frequent occurrence: as a rule, when rain falls, it falls in 'bucketfuls.' Creeks, upon which nearly all the country is dependent for supplies of water, are the great reservoirs; they abound everywhere, between the ridges and mountains, and are set like pails beneath the eaves of a house, to catch and hold the rain as it falls into them, to store it up for future use. They are simply waterholes at greater and less distance, of greater and less size, and appear in the form of the links of a chain. During a heavy thunder-storm or fall of rain, these waterholes are filled, one after the other, and after being all filled, the superfluous water rolling over the surface, conceals them entirely from view, when the creek or chain of waterholes assumes the appearance of a large swollen river. During seasons of long drought, many of these waterholes are apt to become dry, and thus cause the loss of great numbers of horses and cattle, which being weak from scarcity of pasturage, often sink in the slimy bottom, and, unable to extricate themselves, perish. Springs are very rare, and it is from the creeks that the rivers are chiefly supplied. During dry seasons, therefore, many of

the rivers are very shanow and easily fordable. On the occasion of a heavy fall of rain they rise rapidly, but the flow of water subsides almost as quickly as it rises. The greater portion of the country has the appearance of having been visited by tremendous falls of rain, which have washed away all the vegetable mould and fine soil from the mountains, hills, and ridges, and lodged it, as in many places of the interior, in large heaps, ten and twenty feet deep—where, unfortunately, it is of no use for cultivation, in consequence of the prevalence of hot winds which scorch and dry up, in summer, all succulent vegetation. A heavy and sudden fall of rain after a long drought, carries away the fine friable soil, as may always be observed in these Australian down-falls of rain, as easily as meal would be carried from the roof of a house during a shower; and there are large tracts of country where there is little soil remaining—nothing being seen but the substrata of clay, shingle, and sand, with tufts of grass and herbs struggling through the surface. The most lamentable feature in connection with good soil, most usually found in heaps, streaks, and patches, is that the great proportion of it is liable to be covered by water, and the crops destroyed by floods. There are matters here of grave importance for the political economist and the legislator. There are districts where population should be encouraged; there are other places where it should be discouraged. Ten thousand acres is a great extent of land; one hundred thousand acres is still

greater ; but there are parts of the far interior where even a goat might not be able to subsist on such a large district at one period of the year ; whereas, at another period the same land might be capable of feeding half-a-million. Having inquired of a gentleman acquainted with the district referred to, why the New South Wales government could not get an offer of ten pounds a-year for a hundred thousand acres ? the answer was intelligible—‘ You understand,’ he said, ‘ there is great want of hills, and a very level country ; when a flood comes there is no place for the cattle to go, to escape being drowned ; they are surrounded on all sides by water, and yet, when a drought comes, they perish for want of it.’

Thunder-storms prevail during the months of December, January, and February—the time of harvesting and sheep-shearing. Hail-storms occur at the same period, and are frequently most destructive to crops. The thunder is most appallingly loud, accompanied by cracks like the bursting of large pieces of artillery. The lightning, called sheet-lightning, is vivid and incessant sometimes, without being accompanied by thunder and rain. The forked lightning, which always accompanies thunder and rain, is often seen darting across the heavens in a zig-zag direction, frequently coming to the earth in a continuous stream, like liquid fire poured out of a vessel. The number of splintered trees in high mountainous regions bears evidence to its destructive force. The course of the desolating wind, ‘ the

cyclone,' may be found sometimes distinct^{ly} marked in a pathway through the bush, trees being torn up by their roots, leaving a track like the clearance for a road or a railway. The fall of rain is far from being general. A few families located on the high coast ranges, complained to me that it was always raining where they were. I certainly had never been there myself save when it was raining. A gentleman residing far inland, about the same latitude, mentioned to me shortly afterwards, that he had not seen rain for three years. The country without rain was decidedly the most preferable for the grazing of sheep. The dew falls there plentifully, as it does in similar districts; the grasses and herbage are of a more nourishing character; and the sheep are exempt from the diseases to which they are subject in cold wet quarters. There are always frost and snow on the high mountains south of Queensland during winter, but none on the coast.

There is as great diversity of country as there is of climate. The undulating ridges, like billows of the ocean, which prevail to a great extent in the interior, are dreary and desolate, monotony seeming to hold supreme sway; but there are many picturesque districts, towering peaks of mountains, hills and valleys, with vistas extending and spreading out in all directions. No landscape is thought perfect without water, and a river may be observed frequently gliding softly along, upon which there are sporting numerous varieties of water-fowl. The trees, too, always plentiful, resound

everywhere with the notes of birds, and lend a liveliness to the scenery which is otherwise so agreeable and complete.

Where nature does most, man does least. Toil, sweat, and manual labour are very unsuitable in a warm climate for the English constitution. Ease may be more remunerative than labour, and it is grazing, nothing save grazing flocks of sheep, and herds of cattle, to which the great bulk of the land is adapted, and to which it can ever be appropriated. The ground, as I have said, is occupied by the first discoverers, or by those who have purchased from them or their successors the right of occupation. These occupiers pay a yearly sum to the government for the use of the land which they hold. In the large domain, it may be forty, sixty, one hundred, or two hundred thousand acres, which may be in the possession of one person, a strong attachment may have grown up, and great interest may be felt in the place; and, in those instances where the owner and his family reside, the squatter homes will always be found to bear the aspect of thriving little villages. They are the great centres of attraction for working people; and if the mansion-house of the proprietor be distinguished far and wide by a generous hospitality to travellers, there will not unfrequently be found, also, all the elegance and refinement which obtain in the lord of the manor's house in England.

Gardening is always an agreeable and profitable

pastime where the climate is favourable. A gentleman occupying a station on the borders of Queensland and New South Wales, seemed rather ambitious of excelling his neighbours in this delightful art, and nature lent him a strong helping hand in his garden husbandry. One might guess a long time without thinking what this was—a quarry of bone dust! This was actually the case, and I was present at the time when the gentleman was digging and carting it away from the mouth of a limestone cave. There were myriads of bats in the cave, and magnificent stalactites.

Geologists and mineralogists will find everything to their heart's content in Australia—if they might not, indeed, have to coin new words to add to their very large vocabularies. Shepherds have usually tales to tell of something or other which they have found. One showed me a piece of sulphur which he had taken from a layer, another a piece of lead, another a piece of copper; and one told me that he had sunk a well where the ground was covered with lava, and the water was too hot for drinking—tantalising enough in warm weather.

Much remains to be known of Australia. Every day brings with it some fresh discovery of something or other. The remarkably favourable terms on which persons are permitted to go and occupy unknown parts of the interior and follow the pursuit of grazing, combined with the great facility of transit, has served hitherto to bring to light, and advance quickly, a knowledge of much that would have otherwise remained long

in obscurity. Only a few years ago, a tribe of blacks was discovered with no hair on their heads. It was long known that buffaloes and alligators abounded within the line of the tropics in Northern Australia, but it is only very lately that pioneers, in searching for 'runs,' found themselves suddenly face to face with them. Three young lads, sons of adjoining settlers, who had gone on an exploring expedition in the northern part of Queensland in search of country, where they might establish themselves as graziers, told me on their return, after an absence of nearly twelve months, of a terrible fright which they experienced on seeing an alligator lurking by the side of a river. They had no knowledge of anything of the kind before, and this was a neighbour—even worse, they thought, than the blacks—for whom they were not at all disposed to cherish any friendly feeling. They stuck, however, to the country which they had found, and called a large river which they had discovered by the name of the leader of the party.

CHAPTER III.

PIONEERING.

EARLY SETTLEMENT—VARIETY OF COUNTRY—ABORIGINAL GUIDES—A PIONEER'S EXPERIENCES—HOW TO TREAT BLACKS—FACTS RELATING TO THEM—ORIGIN OF SQUATTING—EXPERIENCES OF NEW SETTLERS—ABORIGINES OF AUSTRALIA — ABORIGINES OF NEW ZEALAND — FACTS RELATING TO THEM.

LITTLE was known of the early settlement of the interior, all the information having been confined to a small number of persons who occupied large tracts of land. Those settlers had friends and acquaintances whom they were always ready to serve, and it was not in conformity with their interest to make the public acquainted with the discoveries which were being made every day of new territory. There were some who, thoroughly inured to the life, and acquainted with the mode of dealing with the aborigines, became very expert in pioneering, and profited largely by selling their right to the country which they had discovered. Some districts were good, some bad, and some indifferent; and considerable judgment and knowledge of the natural grasses, soil, and climate, were necessary,

in the selection of eligible spots. There was sound and healthy country, and there was country altogether unsound and unhealthy. It might be absolutely ruinous to take possession in some districts for the grazing of sheep, though those districts might do for the breeding of cattle.

Views of permanent settlement were entertained by very few, and the right acquired by discovery to tracts of land as large as an English or a Scottish county, were parted with as readily and freely as a horse may be parted with in a market. These tracts are called 'runs;' and the sale and purchase of them continue to form one of the largest business transactions in the Australian colonies. The work of pioneering, and 'taking up country,' still continue to be prosecuted with as great vigour as ever—more especially in the recently formed colony of Queensland, and also in Northern Australia—and the stimulants to money-making, by taking advantage of the great opportunities afforded for the increase of sheep and cattle in grassy districts, without purchasing the land, continue as potently in operation as in the early days of emigration.

Representatives of almost every calling and profession may be found sheep-farming in Australia—sons of landed proprietors in Great Britain, retired naval and military officers, bankers, barristers, clergymen, clerks, and numbers of others who knew nothing of sheep before they became settlers, save when they had to think or speak of it in the shape of mutton. To learn

the management of sheep was to some almost as difficult as to learn Greek and Hebrew; but, where money is to be made, the way of making it will also be quickly learned, and the sheep being a profitable animal, it is accordingly made the subject of patient study and investigation. It is the same with cattle. Those who knew as little of a cow and a bull, as they did of a male and a female rhinoceros, made themselves acquainted with the breeding and raising of cattle, and to what tends most to profit in fattening them for the butcher and boiling down. A 'run,' however, *that* is the first thing to be looked for under certain well known 'Crown land regulations.' The land in the country to be discovered must be taken up in 'blocks,' each block being estimated to sustain four thousand sheep, and six hundred and fifty head of cattle; and for each block there is to be paid ten pounds annually at the Government treasury, besides a small assessment on the stock. The discoverer's statement that the land will sustain so much stock, is the only guarantee which is required, but a block originally estimated for four thousand sheep, may be afterwards found capable of feeding two or threetimes that number. There would never seem to be any difficulty in obtaining a 'run,' which has been occupied and partly stocked, if we may judge from the advertisements of stations for sale with which the columns of newspapers abound. Adventurous spirits, however, save the expense of purchasing the rights which others may have acquired by discovering tracts for themselves.

Those who have had long experience in the bush, and are accustomed to the work of pioneering and 'taking up country,' are always careful to avail themselves of the services of one or two trusty black attendants before setting out on an exploring expedition. The aborigines have something very nearly approximating to an intuitive knowledge of eligible territory; and their services are in many ways valuable, as they know the most likely places to look for water, and are expert in catching opossums, which are necessary in the event of provisions falling short. Their senses of sight and hearing are remarkably acute; they very soon detect the presence of other blacks in the locality, and give timely warning against any danger which may be likely to arise from a sudden attack, should the natives prove hostile. Fears are seldom entertained of their desertion, or their fraternising with other tribes of blacks which may be met with. Their loyalty to the tribe to which they belong is proverbial, and desertion to another tribe would be met with most severe punishment. Besides, they would be certain to meet with no very welcome reception from another tribe. As their services are given more from goodwill than from hope of reward, it is only from attachment to persons with whom they are well acquainted that they are ever prevailed upon to lend themselves as parties in an exploring expedition.

The kindness extended by some settlers to aboriginal

children in domesticating them, and in giving them employment as they grow up, has been sometimes the means of enriching the families of the former. The black boys who have formed an attachment to their masters' sons are always ready to do whatever their young masters ask them. In breaking-in refractory young horses, which are usually the most valuable animals, a black's services are always in request; whilst in rough, scrubby, and mountainous country, none can compete with them as horsemen in the mustering of cattle and in 'heading' mobs of wild horses. Young men, who from early childhood have associated freely with them, and are acquainted with their habits and disposition, acquire a degree of confidence which leads them to think little of the difficulties of pioneering and taking up country, when the blacks are the great obstacle in the way. The temptation to hazard an enterprize is sometimes very great, as first-rate tracts may remain unoccupied, in consequence of the blacks being numerous and hostile. Mr. Peterson, the son of a most respected old settler, was not more than twenty-two years of age, when he resolved to make an excursion into the interior, to take up a station in a part of the country of which he had heard favourable accounts from an old stockman of his father, who had been there, and who was now the owner of a station not very far distant from the district to which young Mr. Peterson proposed to go. 'Yes, Micky go,' said a strapping young black fellow, apparently quite

delighted at the prospect of a long journey, when Peterson put the question if he would accompany him. Tom and Bill, two old convicts, assigned servants of his father, also said that they would go. They set no value on their lives; there was nothing to prevent them from going, whilst they were very likely glad of the change. Peterson said, rather thoughtfully, as if warning them of the danger to which he was leading them, 'We'll chance it.' Tom said, 'As long as I have my rifle in my hands, I am not afraid of blacks.' A mob of young heifers and some bulls were drafted out from old Mr. Peterson's herd of cattle to stock the district which was to be taken up. The two assigned servants were placed in charge of the bullock dray, which contained two years' supply of flour, sugar, tea, salt, clothing, horse-shoes, etc., with implements for erecting a hut and a stock-yard—Micky, the black boy, and his young master taking charge of the cattle and a few head of horses. There was very little expense incurred in the expedition, and as they had all been inured to bush life, everything went on as they expected. If the pole of the dray broke, Tom was quite competent to put another one in, and if any of the team of working bullocks died, it could be very soon replaced by one of the heifers which travelled alongside. After about six months' wearied travelling in bush tracks, leading from station to station in occupied districts—sometimes on the banks of a river, at other

times over stony ridges, through valleys thickly matted with grass, and over mountains and hills thickly covered with trees, they found themselves on the confines of the territory which they proposed taking possession of from the black proprietors. Their prospects did not look very encouraging, however. At the last station on their journey they saw two men on horseback, with carbines in their hands, tending a small herd of cattle. They might have remained there also, and supported one another, but it was country that they wished to take possession of to which a personal claim could be established, and the right to which could be placed beyond all dispute, by the mere fact of priority of occupation. One thing was clear enough, and this they learned from the men at the station, the blacks were anything but friendly; and they had the evidence of this with their own eyes, each of them with whom they had met having darted out of sight. Peterson knew well how to deal with them; not to trust them; to keep them at a distance, but at the same time to shew no hostility towards them. It was satisfactory to learn that no one had been there before him; that the country beyond was wholly unoccupied, and that he might take up his blocks anywhere. He continued to travel down the banks of a river, with his dray and cattle—the blacks taking to flight, like wild ducks, as the cavalcade advanced—a very bad omen, and arguing anything but a peaceful settlement amongst them. Peterson was, how-

ever, in no way disheartened ; down, down the river he still descended until he came to an alluvial flat, with some ridges closely adjoining; and here he halted, thinking it would be a good spot for the head station. There was no time to be lost in marking out his boundaries, and in sending a description of the district which he had taken up to the Crown Land Office. Their steeds were in good condition, and, tomahawk in hand, and accompanied by Micky, Peterson rode about ten miles farther down the river, marked a tree as the extremity of his run in that direction, with frontage to both sides of the river. Peterson was not very greedy, at least not so greedy as some persons have been ; he was content with fifteen miles on both sides of the river, extending ten miles backwards, which he estimated as four blocks. Tom and Bill were set to work, and in a very short time succeeded in erecting a hut. They were proceeding with the erection of the stockyard, and had gone some distance with a cross-cut saw to fell timber for splitting rails. The blacks had been watching them, however, and, unobserved, had stealthily crept up near to them, until they were within reach, and were enabled to make a fatal dart with their spears. Bill was killed on the spot, a spear having passed through his body ; Tom was mortally wounded—his cries were heard, however, by Peterson, who was instantly at his side on horseback, with his loaded rifle ; but he could only hear from the dying man's lips what had occurred, of which there was fatal evidence in the spear still

quivering in his body. Peterson was quite equal to the occasion, though he had now no more than Micky to support him; but it was really a most trying situation. Micky was little better than a boy, and was seldom entrusted with a rifle. Peterson was there all alone, far in the wilderness, surrounded by hordes of savages, ready to fall upon him, all thirsting for his life; and there was the dray, with the two years' supplies, and a herd of cattle to be looked after. So long as he was on horseback, with the rifle in his hand, and pistols in his holsters, he felt no danger whatever, he said, as he could keep any number of the blacks at bay—could dance round them and pick them off one by one. They had evidently had experience of fire-arms, as they carefully avoided showing themselves, and were afraid to come near or to stand in sight of that of which they have such aversion. Convinced that they would make another attack upon their now very helpless party, Peterson was never thrown off his guard, but it was impossible to keep the hut and dray in sight all the day, when he and his companion were both out with the cattle. On returning one night they found that the hut had been broken into, and that the blacks had been helping themselves to the two years' supplies. Matters were now becoming serious. There was the prospect of starvation before them, or the alternative of quitting the district, with the destruction of all Peterson's fondly-cherished hopes, added to the loss of the two men, and it was very apparent that the

blacks kept their eyes closely upon them. Surmising that they would soon return again, he entrusted Micky with the charge of the cattle, and lay in ambush within rifle range of the hut. He had not been long concealed when he observed a black fellow crawling stealthily towards it on the ground; he levelled his rifle and, taking sure aim, fired—the black fellow lay dead. Peterson had his plans formed—he knew that the aborigines were very easily frightened—he, therefore, cut off the black fellow's head and buried the remainder of his body; the head he carried into the hut, and carefully deposited it in a cask from which they had been abstracting sugar. A large number of blacks came next day to the hut,—they obtained an easy entrance, and watching their movements at a distance, to his great satisfaction, he observed them making out of the hut in the maddest possible haste, stumbling over each other in their eagerness to escape. Their sudden flight and trepidation were easily accounted for; their eyes had caught sight of the black fellow's head. I have the authority of Peterson for saying that the blacks deserted the district immediately, and that he was never troubled with them again. He made some important observations to me as to the manner in which wild tribes of blacks ought to be treated, which agreed exactly with the statements of others, who have had a great deal of experience amongst them. "The most of the "brushes" (butchering, you know) with the blacks arise from the sheer brute

ignorance of the whites. They first make friends of them, and pamper their animal tastes and propensities, which must be gratified, and it is very natural for them to take a man's life, or to do anything else which might stand in the way of obtaining a bit of tobacco, some sugar, or some flour. The point to be observed, is to keep them in subjection by awe and reverence,—prohibit them from coming near the homestead—don't meddle or disturb them in any way; and if they want tobacco, or anything, give it merely in payment for work, and nothing more. Kindness they don't understand.' Those remarks, however, apply only to districts where the natives are wild and unruly. In quarters which have been long occupied, tribes of blacks may be seen roaming about from station to station, on the most friendly terms with the settlers, not the slightest fear being entertained of them—many of them, in fact, being strongly attached to their masters, and making themselves highly useful to the settlers. The females very frequently act as domestic servants and nurses, whilst the men are employed as bullock-drivers and stockmen, and the boys in going messages or in tending cattle. They will never, however, remain long at one place, and are always ready to fly, like birds out of a cage, back to the bush, where they live encamped by the side of a creek, or river, subsisting on grubs found in dead trees, opossum, or fish,—or on an occasional young calf. They seldom remain longer than one night, however, at one place. Messages are very frequently sent

to all the members of a tribe—some of whom may at the time be very profitably employed at stations—to attend a ‘corrobora,’ or meeting of the whole tribe, to enforce the observance of some heathenish rites; or perhaps to prepare for battle with another tribe, for some offence, such as that of taking away one of their ‘gins,’ or females.

It is always understood that to take families into districts where there is danger from the blacks would be highly improper, and such a course is generally carefully avoided. Mr. Peterson mentioned the case of a family with whom the writer was well acquainted, who ran serious risks from the proximity of some of the more unruly aborigines. The father of the family had engaged himself as superintendent of a station on the very outskirts of occupied country, and took his family with him. A white woman in that quarter was a novelty, and Peterson did not grudge a journey of seventy miles to visit the family occasionally. He warned them, however, of the great danger to which they were exposing themselves by permitting the blacks to go in and out of their house, and by showing great kindness to them. In long-settled districts such a course would be thought nothing of, and indeed it prevails universally; but this was a different case. During one of his visits, Mr. Peterson thought it proper to expostulate again with his host and hostess on the impropriety of their conduct. The advice was immediately acted on, and a black

fellow, on being refused admittance into the house, went away very moodily—seemingly as a much wronged and injured person—and having laid hold of his spear, which was outside, he returned and threw it with all his strength from the door of the house. It was intended for his benefactress, who was at the fire-place at the time with a tea-pot in her hand. She narrowly escaped being killed, the spear having passed beneath her arm and pierced the side of the tea-pot. Fire-arms were immediately in request, and all the encampment of blacks about the place instantly fled, brooding over revenge. A breach had, however, been created, which it would take a long time to heal. In such cases, and in cases of stealing cattle and breaking into huts, severe retaliatory measures are resorted to, and blacks are generally fired upon when they are met in districts where their depredations have been committed, or they are driven off like wild animals. This is never considered, however, a very safe and economical method of procedure. Marauding bands of blacks, here to-day, away to-morrow, and bent upon destruction of life and property, are anything but satisfactory; and every precaution should be taken to keep them quiet. Some most lamentable instances have occurred of individuals, and even of whole families, having fallen victims to their perfidy and revenge—victims, too, it must be said with regret, of want of knowledge of the aboriginal character. It is almost impossible for any one with the smallest shred of humanity in his soul, not to feel compassion for the

naked, homeless, miserable, destitute-looking creatures, all wearing the image of humanity, with smiles very often too on their countenances, redolent with good nature, and apparently susceptible of great sense of kindness. The blacks do not, however, take this view of their case, as they have no consciousness of being so abject as they are supposed to be. Very likely they entertain contempt for those, who, acting towards them as if they thought them so, would rob them, if they could, of their freedom and independence. They would appear, nevertheless, to have a strong sense of justice. A woman who refuses to give them all she promised for bringing a supply of fire-wood, has her child taken away, and its mutilated remains exposed on a tree before her house on the following day. The death of an equal number of whites is made to atone for the same number of blacks. Details of their deeds, or misdeeds, would not be very edifying, however. The first occupants of the land were left to defend themselves and their property in the best way they could, until the establishment of the native police—a body of very recent origin. An old shepherd pointed out to me an old stockyard, which he had seen at one time stuck round with blacks' heads, to deter other blacks from approaching the homestead. He always went armed, he said, when following the sheep, and could not even go for a bucket of water at his hut without another man keeping guard over him with a musket. This old shepherd, in whose hut I stayed one

night, whilst narrating some of his hair-breadth escapes, gave a rather curious narrative of the adroit manner in which a black fellow succeeded in escaping the contents of a blunderbuss. The shepherd had an aboriginal woman living with him, as was very customary with old convicts. The blacks made a rush upon his hut one day when he had been out; 'they escaped helter skelter, however, when I entered,' he said, 'but there was one black fellow who had not time to get away, he having been rummaging about trying to get something to take with him. I thought I was sure of *him*, and kept pointing my blunderbuss at him; but what does he do? he lays hold of my "gin" and keeps her always between me and the blunderbuss, whichever way I pointed it: I could make nothing of him, so he escaped into the bush, dragging the "gin" before him, and going backwards.'

It is never thought sportsmanlike, or honourable, to kill or fire at a hare in its lair, and some consideration of this kind might be fairly pleaded in favour of the blacks; and if three white men, of whom I heard, could—as they really did—surround an encampment, and continue firing amongst them until they were all killed, it only goes to prove that the whites are capable of committing as great acts of cruelty as the blacks. The eldest boy of one of those white men had been taken away and killed, and this fact might go far in extenuation of the frightful barbarity, — murdering the whole encampment. But there was certainly nothing of this kind to war-

rant still more merciless dealing with blacks in another case of which I heard, in which they were disposed of like vermin, by mixing strychnine in the bread in the huts which they were wont to rob. The devil has been called an 'ass,' and there was certainly abundant evidence of the fact in the case of the man who committed this fearful crime, and whose *grippiness* — determination not to lose anything, and predilection for driving a hard bargain, was a point of weakness which easily exposed him to be taken advantage of, and ultimately rendered him the victim of a swindle by which he sustained the loss of everything which he had taken such unscrupulous means for holding possession of. Merchants at the time were realising 15 and 20 per cent. by advancing money upon stations; he entered the lists with them, and the opportunity was not to be lost of concluding an excellent bargain, as he supposed, with a gentleman who was to give him a high rate of interest for an advance of six thousand pounds. It was a concerted plan to rob him; he was waited on at his own house, and, at the 'gentleman's' request, gave a draft upon the bank for the amount, deriving great satisfaction at the thought that the payment of the money was beyond all dispute a conclusion of the bargain. The legal formalities by which the right and interest in the station were to be made over to him were to be attended to on the following day, at a stated place and time. Nothing was seen, however, of the 'gentleman' at the stated place and time; all

that could be ascertained being the fact that he had been seen very early in the morning at the bank, and had received the six thousand pounds. The loser afterwards left for another part of the globe, where, perhaps, he might find more honest people to do business with.

Whilst sympathizing with the blacks, the fact is not to be lost sight of that they are capable of committing frightful atrocities; their conduct sometimes being more that of ferocious wild beasts than of human beings. The refinement of cruelty which they have been known to practise, has perhaps no parallel in the history of any other race of savages in the world. One of the oldest settlers mentioned to me that he had found one of his convict servants tied to a tree, still breathing, his eyes having been gouged out, and portions of his flesh having been rudely pricked out as with the points of spears. The leniency of the blacks, however, is as little extended to those of their own tribe who may provoke their ire by disobedience to some native customs. A gentleman told the writer that a black boy in his service, having failed to comply with some heathenish rites, such as a tooth knocked out, or something of that sort, was seized by the tribe he belonged to, cut and hacked all over with boomerangs, was at last subjected to the very extremity of torture, and pinioned down to an ant-bed with forked sticks. In this position his employer found him, but life had fled.

During the long, weariful evenings which a clergyman in the far bush is so frequently doomed to spend in the

huts of stockmen and others, it is impossible to avoid listening to stories of adventurous life. On those occasions the blacks form a very common topic of conversation; and the recital of encounters with them are sometimes not very agreeable to hear. One stockman, Neil M'Closky, who was one of the earliest pioneers, assured me, that he, with two men and a black boy, were bold enough to face, and fight and conquer, two or three hundred natives in the open field, in a fair pitched battle. It was at the time of the large emigration to Adelaide from the United Kingdom, when cattle were bringing very high prices. To avail himself of this market, M'Closky, with two men and a black boy, set out with a herd of heifers, through what at that time was unfrequented country, following the course of the Darling River. The blacks mustered in large force as they proceeded on their journey—sometimes in their front, sometimes in their rear, all hooting and yelling at the highest pitch of their voices. No doubt could be entertained of their murderous intentions. The colours red and white—emblems of war—shone out conspicuously from their naked bodies, whilst they were all armed with spears, boomerangs, waddies, and shields. The cattle were greatly frightened, and it was very difficult to keep them together. The herdsmen left the river during a moonlight night with the cattle, with the object of escaping their foes; their remorseless pursuers were, however, upon them at the dawn of morning next day. It was necessary to bring the cattle back to the river

to drink, and there was more of the enemy there waiting them. All thought of the blacks were sometimes lost, however, in endeavouring to keep sight of the cattle. This state of matters continued for some days in succession, the herdsmen being hunted and pursued at every step of their journey. Congratulating themselves, however, that they had at last outran the blacks, not having seen them for two days, they quietly encamped by the side of the river, and their horses being much fatigued by the reins of the bridles being always held in their hands, they were hobbled and allowed to graze freely. Whilst repairing their saddles, and sitting comfortably by the fire, old Joe—one of the men—shouted, ‘The blacks, the blacks,’ in a voice of grim horror and desperation. There was no mistake about it, there they were, coming down upon them, like a swarm of bees, completely surrounding them. The cattle, when the blacks are in any way troublesome, always run off, and bound away like deer in a forest, at their utmost speed, having a wholesome dread of the natives’ spears; and on seeing and hearing them, M’Closky’s herd dashed into the river and swam to the other side. The blacks were rushing in upon them—‘a horse, a horse, a kingdom for a horse;’ but their horses were hobbled at some distance from the place of their encampment, and it was hopeless to attempt reaching them without being speared. To have got on their horses’ backs, even at some risk, was the only likely means of escaping, there

being otherwise no hope apparently but that of being overwhelmed by the horde of savages. All the provisions, however, for the journey lay beside them—flour, salt meat, tea, sugar, saddles, blankets, etc.—and to have left them would have been to lose everything, and to expose themselves to certain destruction. There was little time for thinking of escape, or for calculating risks; it was a sudden surprise—the boomerangs came whizzing through the air all round them, and they were for some time kept shifting about and leaping on the ground to escape the dangerous missiles, in much the same way as if they were treading on live coal, or were dancing a quadrille; and they would certainly have been struck, had it not been for the branches of the trees with which they were surrounded. How M'Closky managed at this very critical juncture will be best narrated in his own words:—‘Steady, men, steady; you have got your guns and ammunition—let’s fire one after the other; stand you there, Joe; Jack, stand you there, and I will stand here,’ pointing towards the places where they were to stand in a circle as it were with their backs to each other; ‘we’ll do for them, one after the other; Jacky I told off for picket-duty, to see that none of them crawled on the ground near and through a scrub not far off. I had not finished speaking when Joe roared and bellowed like an ox when drawn up to the pen with the green hide rope, and the red-hot branding-iron is applied to its ribs; a boomerang or waddy had struck him on the thigh, he fell forward, but quickly

rose again, determined, he said, to sell his life as dearly as possible.' Children, but certainly not men, might have been frightened at the 'guys' which the blacks had made of themselves, with streaks of pipeclay and red ochre on their faces, and fantastic figures bedaubed all over their naked bodies, no two blacks being alike. They had certainly striven to make themselves as hideous-looking as possible, and some degree of care had been taken to draw an image of a horrible-looking human countenance on the face of the small bark, or wooden shields, which some of them carried on the left arm, with the object of striking terror into the hearts of their enemies. By frantic leaping, shouting, and by brandishing their spears, boomerangs, and waddies in the air, they had heated their blood and worked themselves into a state which was intended for the boiling or the fighting point. They had evidently never been under fire before, and knew nothing of the deadly character of the weapons which they had set themselves to contend with. They had now nothing left but spears and waddies, having expended all their boomerangs, which being intercepted in their flight by the branches of the trees, failed to return to them, as they generally succeed in making those singular weapons of warfare do. Their spears are much to be dreaded, as they can throw them to an incredibly long distance, and unerringly hit the object aimed at. If a small bird perched on a tree serves as a target for the exhibition of their marvellous skill in the use of

this weapon, they will succeed in striking it. They marched boldly up to the front with all they had in the world, and about as naked as they came into the world, their conduct being like that of moths flickering round the flame of a lighted candle. M'Closky and his men kept up a rolling fire as black after black approached within dangerous proximity; but the painted bark and wooden shields were a very sorry protection against the leaden bullets. The hubbub and screaming amongst the 'gins' as they saw warrior after warrior stricken to the ground, and the cries from the wounded, appeared to discomfit them quickly, and to unman their resolution altogether. All at once the whole body fled, as if some invisible power had come in amongst them, which it would be death to one and all to stand near to, or attempt to resist. A parting shot from M'Closky's rifle accelerated their speed. The wounded struggled to get away, dragging themselves along the ground, and one of them, seeing a piccaniny, a young child who had been left behind in the *melee*, made towards it, grasped it in his feeble arms, stumbled and fell. M'Closky could not look any longer at the horrid spectacle, and was glad to rush away from a place that was ever attended in after-life with harrowing recollections. The blacks were entirely nude—at least they had nothing on their bodies but the usual small stripe of opossum skin, like a rope, round their loins, knotted in front; and there was always the horrid spectacle of seeing the effects of

the firing in the gashes upon the naked bodies of the poor savages. It was a severe lesson which had been taught them, one which the survivors could not fail to remember; and it has been by many such lessons that the aborigines have been subdued, and the life and property of the settlers protected and preserved. The sight of a man with a fowling-piece, in a quarter where there is hostility or want of confidence between the blacks and the settlers, will cause almost any number of the former to run away, they being as easily scared in this way as crows from a newly-sown field. It is never desirable, however, that they should be so easily frightened, or that they should be on any but the most friendly terms with their white brethren. They are dangerous as enemies, but as friends they make themselves useful in many ways. A gentleman who occupied a station on part of the river where M'Closky had the brush with them, as a fight with them is modestly termed, assured me that he found them of the greatest service, and that he had no fewer than twenty-five thousand sheep herded chiefly by them. He had studied their character sedulously, had made himself acquainted with the proper way of managing them; and having a whole tribe under him, he had succeeded in checking their roaming propensities.

In the very exciting and interesting work of 'taking up country,' no persons were so likely to succeed, or were so fully competent for the task, as, three strong, active young gentlemen, newly arrived from Scotland,

whom we shall call Brown, Smith, and Robinson, and who were possessed of a fair amount of capital, which they purposed investing in sheep-farming. Brown had been amongst sheep since he was a boy; Smith and Robinson were very willing to learn; they were all armed with a strong determination to succeed, and breast the waves of adversity, whatever these might be. They had not heard much about the blacks, however, and did not take them into account in their reckoning; but one thing they were certain of—whatever others had done, they were capable of doing; whatever difficulties others had contended with, they were as capable of contending with. In some respects their plan might be said to have been well formed, as numbers of young men who arrived at the same period, and who had been induced to purchase land, had lost all their money. The first settlers could not manage to get along with their patches of cultivation; floods, droughts, fluctuating prices, weevil, with the scarcity and the bad quality of labour, sadly dismayed them. Those who had sheep and cattle seemed to be placed beyond the reach of adversity, however; there was but little labour required in tending them; they were not so liable to be swept away as a field of wheat, nor would they be laid flat on the ground and thrashed during a heavy thunder-storm; whilst even in a season of severe and long-continued drought, cattle, sheep and horses, if not too numerous, could find something to subsist on. Besides, those

animals had the power of locomotion ; but the case was very different with expensively-cultivated fields of cereals. Prosperity seemed always to attend those whose wealth consisted in live stock ; and the fine natural pasturage of the country afforded scope for carrying on the pursuit of grazing. When a new discovery seemed all at once to have been made, the valuable purposes to which the waste lands might be turned, there was quite a *furor*. It was at that period that the searching for runs, and 'taking up country,' commenced, and from that time is to be dated the origin of squatting—the monopoly of the waste lands by the class called squatters ; which is such a source of heartburnings and disaffection amongst the people. At the time of Brown, Smith, and Robinson's arrival, sheep were selling at two pounds a head, cows at twenty to thirty pounds, and horses at sixty to one hundred pounds. With such prices, and an unlimited supply of rich pasturage land at a merely nominal rental, no doubt could possibly exist in the mind of any one that grazing in Australia, with any ordinary degree of care and management, was a most remunerative occupation, and a most eligible mode of investing capital. So thought Brown, Smith, and Robinson, and so thought every one. This was a few years before the commercial crisis of 1843 in Great Britain, which brought sheep down in price in Australia from two pounds to two shillings per head, cows from twenty pounds to twenty shillings, whilst horses suffered much

the same rate of diminution in value, bringing ruin to the door of almost every settler. It was during the time of high prices, and when the feverish excitement of taking up country was at its height, that Brown, Smith, and Robinson arrived. Their course was clear; to do as others were doing—to find out a run—to penetrate the interior, and take up country for the grazing of the stock which they intended to purchase. No one, however, could tell them anything about the subject, as no one had ever been there. At least, such was the case generally at that time, though more information may now be gleaned from the memoranda of explorers. They might, however, obtain a description of the country which had been taken up in any one direction by applying at the Crown Land Office; they knew also that by far the greater part, nearly all, in fact, of the country to the Gulf of Carpentaria, was unoccupied, and that they would come upon a run somewhere or other; whilst they could not be wrong in following the track of others who had gone before them. There was no time to be lost, and instead of going by a very circuitous road, but which was plain all the way to where they proposed travelling to, they resolved on shortening their journey, took passage on board a small schooner which was to lead them to a small shipping port, intending to make their entrance from that point into the bush, and cut right across the country, as they had heard that others had done, thus saving themselves a journey of nearly two hundred

miles by the circuitous route. Agreeably to the information which they had received, they found everything at the shipping port which they required for their journey—horses for riding, and carrying their blankets, clothing, provisions, tin pots, and other necessities. The fire-arms which they had carefully brought with them from home were strapped along with the other freight to the large carrying-saddles on the back of the pack-horses. They set out on their exploring expedition in the highest possible spirits, amazed and interested by the novelty of the scenery, by the many singular objects which attracted their attention, and with which they were everywhere surrounded;—birds trees, shrubs, everything was quite new to them, and afforded an endless subject for conversation. They experienced nothing but joyous sensations, which increased immeasurably in the golden dreams which ‘hope, high hope,’ nurtured within their breasts of future wealth and independence. The kindness of every one with whom they met was everything that could be desired—all being ready to give information, although they were long ignorant of the full force of the meaning of the taunting expression, ‘new chums,’ with which they were sometimes greeted. They had been taught how to hobble their horses, to prevent them from straying when encamped out at night; none of them, however, could make damper; and instead of flour in their commissariat stores, they supplied its place with biscuit; whilst they learned from a bullock-driver, beside

whose dray they encamped on the first night, the use of the quart-pot for making tea. The few first nights were spent very pleasantly indeed beside the fire which they had kindled at the usual encamping places where there was water. There was no scarcity of firewood—plenty indeed, of it everywhere; the only grievance in the world of which they felt at the time any reason to complain was the mosquito, which is always very annoying to new-comers; but they sought protection from it by rolling themselves up in their blankets; and having been fatigued, they were all very soon asleep. For about fifty or seventy miles from the place where they started the road was very distinct, as it had been trampled by drays; but beyond this there was, properly speaking, no road, the track being merely a ‘marked tree-line.’ An experienced bushman could have no difficulty in tracing his way from one tree to another; but it was altogether different with those unaccustomed to bush travelling. The marks on some of the trees would be obliterated in consequence of bush fires, some of the marked trees would be blown down by high winds; and once thrown off the track, it would be difficult to find it again. They had come to the marked tree-line, and commenced the ascent of the Australian Alps, described in some old maps as ‘impassable ranges,’ and there was nothing now to guide them in their course save the trees, which they very soon lost sight of, not understanding the great importance of a marked tree-line, and the necessity of looking patiently

for it as if their very lives depended upon it. They were still in great glee, however, always cheering themselves with the hope that they would soon be out of the forest and have a good view all about them, not knowing that Australia is one immense forest. They continued for several days climbing hills and steep mountains, crossing deep ravines, experiencing great difficulties from bluffs of rock, boulders, loose stones, and the thick underwood overtopped by branches of trees, in which they were frequently employed cutting a passage with their pocket-knives for their horses to get through. They were not as yet, however, in any way disheartened. They persevered, assured that 'perseverance,' as they had often heard their parish teacher say, and as they had also read in books, would 'surmount all difficulties,' and be ultimately crowned with success. As the summit of one high mountain was reached, there was always another beyond it, and that, too, must be ascended before they could hope to obtain a view of what they expected—the table-land, and descend upon the prairies, where the settlers were all busy with their flocks of sheep and herds of cattle, accumulating riches rapidly. About two weeks had been expended in the vain attempt to cross the range of mountains, which they could have done in three or four days by following the marked tree-line. They were unceasingly the victims of a delusion in imagining that they must be near a homestead, from the beautiful green swards of grass, newly sprung

up, the ground swept clean as with a broom, from recent bush fires which had covered it, resembling the lawn before a gentleman's dwelling, whilst they mistook the rocks glistening in the sun in certain places, for houses and castles. Smith and Robinson were sure—'quite certain,' they said, that they saw a man, sometimes a woman, carrying a child, walking. It was a mere illusion, but they could not help going to these rocks, and much time and labour were expended in this way, to the great fatigue of both themselves and their horses. At last painful misgivings began to come over their minds, though they did not say anything to each other, that they had been too venturesome. They had heard of persons being lost in Australia and never heard of, and this, too, might be their lot. They helped to cheer one another, however, but the lips did not speak what the heart felt. Their horses were greatly fatigued; as they had lost some of their shoes, and were crippling, and they themselves were compelled to walk on foot nearly all day under the sweltering heat of the mid-day sun. Their clothes were very much torn in going through brushwood and under branches of trees—their feet latterly became blistered and swollen, and as their calf-leather boots could not be put on again when taken off, by bandaging their feet with stripes of cloth they travelled with greater freedom and less pain. Indeed, few persons could have shown so much power of endurance, and they really proved themselves to

be stout-hearted fellows, to whom every praise was due, despite their foolhardiness. There was one thing—a very great danger which they did not understand or anticipate—their minds were apt to become as weak as their bodies, and to be incapable of comprehending the seriousness of their situation, and of devising a means of escape. Once a cloud, like a shadow of death, came over them; it might be called, indeed, a cloud of ignorance, with all its attendant miseries, ruin, desolation, death, like some palpable object which their heads might touch. In the labyrinth of stupendously-high mountains, separated by yawning gulfs, they approached the brink of a precipice, which was concealed from their view by saplings and bushes. The pack-horse lost its footing, rolled down, down to the abyss beneath, and with it all hopes of sustaining themselves—‘lost, all lost, quite lost!’ It was a moment of dreadful agony; their hearts departed from them; their feet were slipping—another instant and they anticipated rolling down after the pack-horse. Quick as lightning Brown called to Smith and Robinson, ‘Hold the horses fast by the heads;’ the reins of the bridle they had been holding, loose, and dangling in their hands. Fear was communicated to the horses by the sudden hold laid of them, and they dragged their blind guides from the dangerous ground. Brothers in adversity, they wisely avoided any altercation; they slowly retraced their steps, intending to follow the water up, quite contrary to the great bush-directory, to follow

the water down. When lost, it was a most hazardous task to ascertain the direction in which the water was running. Smith, at one place, took off his Glengarry bonnet and threw it into the stream ; it was soon out of sight, and he lost it. Robinson quietly remarked to him that he might have thrown a bit of a branch instead, and kept his Glengarry. It was impossible to tread in the face of almost perpendicular mountains, which wound round and round both sides of the stream like the letter g. Their perseverance and determination had their reward in one sense by satisfying their minds that they were, as they thought, always ascending higher ; but their mistake was taught them in a very startling fashion. The gnawings of hunger had compelled them to kill one of their horses ; they set out next morning with a portion of the horse-flesh, with as much as they thought would suffice before reaching the station on the high table-land, which they were told they would come to after crossing the mountains. They toiled on, travelling where travelling was possible, and coming always nearer, as they supposed to their destination ; when all at once, and to their utter confusion and consternation, they came to the very place where they had been several days before ! There could be no doubt about it whatever : there was the dead horse, with the large gashes in its haunches, where they had been cutting out steaks. They all looked on in mute amazement, staring at the dead horse as if it had been

a grave newly dug up for their interment. For some time they could not avoid thinking that they were in some enchanted country, and were the sport of the weird sisters of the forest. Brown at last said he knew how it was—they had been travelling in a circle; Smith and Robinson nodded assent. Their knees bent beneath the weight of their bodies, and borne down by their accumulated load of anguish, sorrow, and disappointment, they all sunk like dead men to the ground. They said that they had a compass, but that they did not know how to use it. How they ultimately succeeded in getting out of the mountains, where they had been shut up for nearly six weeks, they could not very well explain. Desperation, a last effort for life, had supplied them with almost superhuman courage and strength; leaving their horses' saddles, and everything that was burdensome to carry, they had set out on foot, keeping close to the stream, and following it to its source, subsisting on kangaroo rats, having already acquired so much knowledge of life in the bush as enabled them to cater for food, without going to the very great extreme—killing a horse. Most providentially, they came to a shepherd's hut at the side of the stream which they had so persistently followed. An old convict who was in charge of the hut made some tea for them, and afterwards conducted them to the head-station, where they were most kindly treated by the owner. They gradually recruited their strength, and in a few weeks, after being refitted, were enabled

to make another start ; this time largely benefited, one would very naturally suppose, by their experience, and the necessity of using greater caution in their future endeavours, which even the snakes, upon which they were always in danger of trampling, might have taught them. In crossing a high range of mountains, out of reach of the coast-line, and debouching into the interior, there was a magnificent view presented to them of the vast, boundless expanse of territory lying stretched out before them like a scene on the canvas of a panorama. Hilly and hilly as it appeared to them, like mole-hills, thickly placed together in the corner of a field, ' Links, links,' said Smith, being put in mind of the irregular mounds of sand or downs which he had seen on the sea-coast of his native country ;—not a plain to be seen—the whole country covered with trees, except a few white specks that looked like lakes, but which they afterwards discovered were places where there were no trees. Their path seemed now very plain and easy. The country was now being occupied, and there was nothing for them to do but to proceed down the course of some of the rivers or creeks, until they came to where the last station was taken up.

They had now come to one of life's great turning points, when all the issues of the future seemed as if dependent on the first step. They were ignorant of a great number of things, and these they could never hope to learn from mere hearsay ; none of them could make damper, salt a bullock, shoe a horse, or handle an adze ; and they

could not tell men as ignorant as themselves how to do those things. They did not know good grazing country from bad—knew nothing of the modes of management ‘Divide and conquer,’ and divide and be conquered. They separated, and went through a course of colonial experience which they ought never to have learned. Had they remained together, in other words, remained true and faithful to themselves—enjoying each other’s society, deriving mutual support, countenance, and encouragement, they would have supplied in a large measure the deficiencies under which they were all labouring, and made themselves masters of the situation. They are now all dead. Brown and Smith’s tale is very soon told. They were unfortunate, to begin with, in a selection of bad country, taking up country that had been passed by others. There were expenses connected with the starting of a station for which they were altogether unprepared, and never anticipated. Money is easily borrowed from merchants upon security of stock and station at exorbitant rates of interest—15 and 20 per cent. ; indeed, as high as 25 per cent. has been mentioned, and prevails to an enormous extent. They never could get themselves out of the hands of the merchants, from whom they were obliged to receive their supplies for the station—another large item of merchants’ profits. ‘There is no friendship in business,’ so passes the mercantile axiom, though there will be always found a great deal of apparent friendship in the forming of business connections. Brown had a lot of

maiden ewes which, if he had been permitted to keep, (as he said to the writer, in a long winter night when he was staying at his homestead, and listening to the tale of his adventures,) he would have got out of the merchant's hands. They must be sold, however, as the merchant wanted the money in payment of long outstanding arrears.

Notwithstanding the scrambling nature of the occupation of searching for and finding out 'runs,' and the great jealousy which arises in observing others who are more fortunate, in occasionally, it may be, finding a superior class of country and holding possession of a large tract of it, the greatest favour and kindness is always manifested to 'new arrivals.' Neighbourhood is valuable, affording as it does the advantages of society, of co-operation, and of greater security against the aborigines; and no complaint has been heard of the first occupants having failed to assist by counsel and a generous hospitality those who have followed in their wake. Their lands are quite secure, the boundaries well defined, and registered in the archives of the Crown Land Office; and a right is granted or conceded to the land in occupation, almost equal to purchase in fee simple. They cannot suffer therefore in any way from others following in search of land. Difficulties have sometimes arisen, however, from the uneven extent of country which may have been in possession of one individual, and from the difficulty of not knowing what was altogether included in it. An

amusing incident was told to the writer by one who has gained for himself a name of great and indeed of universal renown as an explorer. In searching for a run, he at last came upon a fine district, and set to work with a black fellow who always bore him company, marking out his boundaries by making marks in the trees with a tomahawk as he went along, describing in this way the large domain he proposed appropriating to himself, as the right of his discovery. It was like travelling round a large English or Scottish county, and some days were occupied in this preliminary, but necessary work. Suddenly, however, he came upon a comfortable homestead; and he found that the district had been formerly occupied, so that all his labour, zeal, and fervent hopes were instantly dashed to the ground. He had commenced his Australian career with a flock of sheep, placed in bad grazing country; they all died, and at the time of which we write, he had fallen into a singular 'line of business'—that of finding new country, and selling his right of discovery to others. The Government of Queensland has very wisely imposed a check on this practice, however, by not recognising any individual right unless the discoverer is in occupation, and the country or 'run' is stocked to the extent of one-fourth of the sheep or cattle which it is estimated to carry. Matters, in regard to the 'searching for runs,' as now going on in Queensland, Northern Australia, and the unoccupied territory of South Australia, were much in the same state in New South Wales at the period of Brown,

Smith, and Robinson's arrival in the last mentioned colony ; and some of the incidents contained in their narrative are not without instruction and guidance for intending emigrants and settlers. Robinson was very fortunate, indeed, in the land which he had taken up, and for this he was mainly indebted to the advice of an overseer of a station, with whom he had been acquainted at home ; indeed, he had learned all the usual routine, and many important lessons from that overseer. A melancholy interest surrounds the closing scene of his life, however, the truth of which was vouched for to the writer by a gentleman well acquainted with him ; and it may not be without interest to the fair reader. There was an object to him of far greater concern than his wide domain, and the multiplied wealth which his annually increasing flocks were ever hastening upon him—one that he loved above all—even more than himself. It was for her to whom he had been betrothed in his fatherland that he was treading, with unwearying care, and unbending resolution, the steps in the ladder that were to conduct him to future wealth and independence. His betrothed was to him an object above all earthly value ; he could not honour her too much ; he could not suffer too much for her. Like some presiding earthly divinity, it might be truly said that it was her eyes and mind that were attending all the unnumbered cares and duties in his striving and industrious life. There was a foe which his unsuspecting nature never dreaded, however ;—he had received as a guest, and most

hospitably entertained in all the frankness of unreserved friendship, one who was very soon to visit his native hills. A word! what may a word *not* do? what has a word *not* done? How many have writhed in agony from a word—their hopes, once like summer blossoms, drooping, languishing, dying, under the blighting curse of a word, leaving them to be cast like ‘loathsome weeds away.’ ‘By thy *words* thou shall be justified, and by thy *words* thou shalt be condemned.’ Think of this, ye slanderers—think of it with all its deep, all its everlasting significance. ‘The power of life and death is in the tongue.’ Robinson’s treacherous friend, as if on some fiendish errand, whispered into the ears of his betrothed that he was a drunkard. The poisoned arrow festered in her heart, and she wrote that she would not be married to him. The world was no longer to him what it had been; in an evil hour he hastened his departure from it, and was numbered with the dead. Under the shade of an iron-bark tree, not far from the wool-shed, there still remain the letters of his name carved out in a block of wood, marking the place of his interment. Many years after his death, the station which he had formed, and fully stocked, was valued at sixty thousand pounds.

The aborigines of Australia are fast melting away, and continue to disappear rapidly before British settlers. The blankets supplied to them by the Colonial Governments, with the sugar, flour, meat, and clothing which they occasionally receive from settlers,

in payment of such services as stripping bark from trees, carrying water and firewood, would seem to act as so many destructive agencies, by enervating and debilitating their constitutions, and hastening their decline. In districts where they might have been seen at one time roaming about, in numbers of ten, twenty, or forty, there is now rarely one to be seen; and the expression of surprise is not unfrequently heard—‘Where have they all gone to?’ Not one of the aborigines of Tasmania (Van Dieman’s Land), where they were at one time very numerous, now remains, and the same tale will soon be told of the aborigines of Australia. Every part of country has its distinct tribe of aborigines, or blacks, as they are almost invariably called, belonging to it; and, when far distant, they are found not to understand the language of each other. In districts long settled, however, these tribes have almost entirely died out, and nought may be found remaining of them, save at some settler’s homestead, in the form of an old decrepit man or gin, or both, bearing so very little trace of the human figure and the lineaments of the human countenance, that they might be very readily trampled upon by the horses’ feet, and be mistaken for cast-off black wearing apparel, or black oil-skin cloth. Numbers of them, old and young, may be very frequently seen huddled together beside a small fire, which they have kindled near a settler’s homestead, all in a most torpid state, from having

gorged themselves with food after a long fast. There is no lack of attention and the offices of humanity shown them by the settlers. If the night is cold, they will receive any quantity of clothing ; but as soon as the sun rises and they feel warm, the clothing is thrown aside and forgotten. They are generally found, however, to keep their blankets in winter ; and the gins, or females, are rarely without an opossum cloak. When employed at a station, both men and women are always clad in English clothing. They will not remain long at one place—they must be always roaming about ; indeed, their wild nature would seem to be altogether invincible, unless when they are taken young, and inured to the habits of civilised life, and even then they are always ready to burst their bonds. The writer saw a black boy, whose portrait appeared in a number of *The Illustrated London News* he having been taken to England by Mr Geddes of Warialda, an old and respected colonist and pioneer ; but no sooner had the black boy returned to his native encampment, than he threw off every article of clothing he had upon him, and fled into the bush, seemingly as delighted as a bird escaping out of a cage.

The native police, or 'black trackers,' as they are sometimes called, are a body of aborigines trained to act as policemen, serving under a white commandant—a very clever expedient for coping with the difficulty, which appeared almost insurmountable, of hunting down and discovering murderous blacks, and

others guilty of spearing cattle and breaking into huts. There is never any friendly feeling subsisting between one tribe of blacks and another ; they are very often at war, and blacks taken from other tribes, usually far distant, will heartily enter into a scheme of pursuing other blacks and bringing them to justice. Consequently the native police were the very men wanted—in accordance with the old adage of ‘set a thief to catch a thief.’ When a black is once put upon the track of others, he will follow it up like a bloodhound, until he comes upon the object of his search—not by the sense of smell, but by the astonishing power of sight, by minute observation of the impressions left on the ground of the footsteps of those on whose tracks he has been directed to follow. Native police, or black trackers, are never heard of except in districts where the blacks are troublesome—that is, in newly settled districts. They are all in the pay of Government, are taught the use of fire-arms, and are clad in uniform like other police officials. They are first-rate horsemen, and take great pride in their gay soldierly appearance and high position.

The nude, houseless aborigines of Australia present a striking contrast to the aborigines or Maoris of New Zealand. Climate will explain the cause of the different types of character of many things on the earth’s surface, but the great difference in the climate of New Zealand and Australia will not explain the difference in the character of the native races of the

two countries. The New Zealanders have sprung from an entirely different stock of the human family. The aborigines of Australia are jet black, have strong, coarse black hair, a slim build, and not much muscular strength. The New Zealanders are of a brown tawny complexion, and have also black hair, but not so coarse and strong. Their bodily frame is well developed—each one seeming tall and muscular, and they have finely formed features. They have paha or villages in which they reside, though these seem at a distance little better than a large motley collection of thatched pigsties; and the first impression of them is not much improved on approaching nearer and examining them—a stockade formed of trunks of trees, sunk in the ground, and close to each other, usually surrounding them. They are most industrious, cultivate the soil, and are acutely alive to the advantages of European civilisation. Many of them acquire wealth, and have saw-mills, flour-mills, and small vessels; but in trading, however, they always bear the character of being frightfully avaricious—cannot endure to see others gaining anything that they think they might possess themselves; hence their jealousy of the English colonists, and the wretched New Zealand wars. Marriages are not of unfrequent occurrence between Europeans and Maori women, and the children by these marriages are noted for being good-looking. A German with whom I met in the northern island was married to one, and he said that he had found no cause

to regret it. Their children were receiving the best education which the town of Wellington could afford. He had fifty Maoris employed as servants. The New Zealanders are said to be partial to these marriage connections with the Pakehas or Europeans ; and half-castes are numerous—chiefly the progeny of old whalers, runaway sailors, and convicts. In a rambling tour, the writer having entered one of these settlers' houses, agreeably to the invitation of the owner, found the Maori wife to be the very paragon of excellence as an active, bustling, thorough-going housewife, whilst the house was well provided with all the usual domestic comforts. Their children were attended to in their education, along with Maori children, by a missionary. The man, an old whaler, deeply lamented the misfortunes which he had suffered from English settlement, as he had been formerly doing a brisk trade with the natives, and with vessels off the coast—all this, however, was now at an end. The following incident is worth relating, as an illustration of the presence of mind and shrewdness of the Maoris ; and in this case of a Maori woman. A ship, in which the writer was a passenger, having arrived in the harbour of one of the settlements, a number of New Zealanders came in their canoes alongside, for the purpose of selling fish, potatoes, and fowls, which they had brought with them. In the midst of a great deal of haggling between them and the mate of the vessel, as to the price of their commodities (they are hard 'gripping' persons to

do business with), a Maori woman, with the usual mat on her shoulders, hair floating in the breeze, and otherwise very sparingly clad, took it into her head to clamber up the ship's side. There was no objection to this. On reaching the deck of the vessel she stood erect as a statue, in no way abashed; and commenced walking about with an amount of ease and dignity which would have graced a princess. After satisfying her eyes with all that was to be seen, she came boldly up to a lady who stood behind me, and entered into conversation with her; some of her words were English, and her meaning could be understood. At last she put the question, 'What kind of country yours?' The lady had come from Edinburgh, and commenced describing, by pointing to the windows of the ship's cabin, the fine houses, riches, and splendour of the city of Edinburgh. The Maori woman listened very thoughtfully and attentively to all that was said, and with great amazement in her face, replied, 'And what brought you here?' It was a poser. The Scottish lady gave an answer, but a very unsatisfactory one, which must have confused the New Zealand woman's mind more and more, as to a people who had such a good country of their own coming to theirs, probably to take their country from them.

Their susceptibility to religious impressions, and their attachment to the outward observance of religion, are very remarkable. More strict observers of the Sabbath could not have been found anywhere than at a

pah at which I was present on a Sabbath. One native declined to speak to me, pointing with his finger towards the sky, and saying it was Sabbath. In acting thus he was following the injunctions understood to have been given by the missionaries to avoid intercourse with Europeans on the Sabbath. There is a wild, magnificent beauty to be met with in many parts of New Zealand. This Maori settlement was one of these places. It was beside a large bay, having a narrow entrance into the ocean, a strip of flax and fern land skirted it on one side—sloping from the base of a very large and high mountain, which was clad to the very summit with dense, dark, impenetrable forest, and communicated to the mind an impression of great strength and protection—whilst a feeling of awe and solemnity seemed to hang over the Maoris, nestled at its foot, and engaged in the pursuits of peaceful industry. There were patches of cultivation scattered everywhere about, interspersed by small streams of water, pure as crystal, proceeding from the bendings of the mountain. It was Sabbath, and some of the Maoris had come considerable distances on horseback to attend divine service. There was as much commotion as at a fair during the early part of the day. The quarrelling of dogs and pigs, which had accompanied some of them, was very great, and there was no small ado in establishing order amongst those unruly animals. There was a neat church and belfry, which the Maoris had erected at their own expense. The church was not

used, however, as it was a day of beautiful sunshine, and they preferred squatting themselves on a grassy knoll beside it. There were 'young men and maidens, old men and children,' all seen wending their way to the house of God. All the old men were tatooed, and some of them had frightful visages; none of the young men were tatooed, however, as the practice had been discontinued through the influence of their Christian teachers. There were many clothed with their native mats—others partly clad in English clothing; and some of the half-caste females were attired in the latest style of fashion. Quietly, one by one, and without a sound or whisper, they arranged themselves in circles on the grassy knoll—the men by themselves and the women by themselves. They had not all sat on the ground when there commenced, in all the 'stillness of Sabbath morn,' the tolling of the Sabbath bell. How strange the sound of that Sabbath bell seemed to me in that place, calling to church such an assemblage of Christian worshippers! The greatest extremes in the world—the highest civilization and barbarianism—seemed suddenly to meet and close in harmony; the Christian brotherhood of men asserting itself independently of all earthly distinctions. The hidden springs of action and motives to conduct are far beyond the reach of mortal eye. It is God that searcheth the heart,—man looketh on the outward appearance; but one might have travelled over all Christendom, and have not seen a more devout demeanour in a large body of Christian.

worshippers on a Sabbath-day. They all appeared as if spell-bound, and under the shadow of a great over-awing power—in the actual presence of the Supreme—as indeed they were. They had been under the ministry of a Wesleyan Methodist missionary, but, as he had many places to attend to, he was absent on this occasion, and his place was supplied by a native teacher, who conducted the services in the Maori language.

Pioneering and the searching for 'runs' has prevailed in New Zealand as in Australia—more especially in the southern or middle island—that part of New Zealand in which the provinces of Southland, Otago, Canterbury and Nelson are situated. The natives there are not numerous, and there is no hostility to be dreaded from them. Graziers are not given to complaining; they have the use and benefit of the land, are not required to purchase it—and indeed they are not permitted to purchase; though this has occurred sometimes—so that a family, all things considered, with a few cows and plenty of pasturage, might not find much ground for complaint in New Zealand. If there are no native dogs in New Zealand, there are not wanting wild ravenous animals. I heard one grazier state that his brother killed, with his rifle, fifteen hundred wild pigs in one year. They had destroyed nearly all his lambs. There was no use made of the dead pigs, and they were left to rot on the ground where they were killed. In their wild state they do not appear to fatten. There

are dogs bred for the purpose of catching them, called 'pig dogs.' Some have adopted a clever method of clearing their cultivated land of fern roots, which are very difficult to get rid of, by folding pigs on the land and leaving them nothing to eat but the fern roots.

If a rebellion had broken out among the natives of Australia, two or three ounces of gunpowder would have been amply sufficient, and far more effectual than two or three millions of good sterling English money which has been expended in the endeavour to suppress the rebellion of the natives in the northern island of New Zealand—that part of New Zealand in which Auckland, Wellington, Taranaki, or New Plymouth, are situated. The different tribes of natives in New Zealand, it appears, don't agree any more than the different tribes of natives in Australia. A chief of a tribe sells his land to the Government, at Auckland;—there are other chiefs opposed to the selling of land, and they fall upon the chief who has sold his land, and kill him and his men. The British authorities don't interfere, and bring the murderers to justice. 'This won't do,' say some of the more intelligent native chiefs; 'let Queen Victoria rule *her* people, and let us have a Maori king to rule *our* people.' 'Mistaken clemency is at the bottom of all our troubles in New Zealand,' says the Reverend S. Ironside, at the head of the Wesleyan Mission—twenty years a missionary amongst the natives, and personally acquainted with the rebellious

chiefs. In a lecture on New Zealand, delivered and published in Sydney, by Mr Ironside—a copy of which he presented to the writer—the following remarks made are not without interest, being written from personal observation. ‘The north island is mainly a system of mountains and valleys. A rugged mountain range runs down the centre, mostly covered with dense bush, scrub, and creeping vine, up to its very summit, with two or three snowy peaks lifting up their hoary heads to the sky. This range sends out its spurs either way towards the coast, sometimes abruptly abutting on the shore, with valleys of the finest agricultural land, a rich black loam, several feet in depth, between them, through which a never-failing stream of the purest water merrily sings on its way to the ocean. These streamlets abound everywhere. In the inland forests and hills, nature has provided for the traveller a good substitute for ladders in climbing, in the roots of the large trees spread along the surface of the ground, while the clinging vine not unfrequently furnishes a capital hand-rail. But, at best, the getting over the ground is slow, heavy, wearisome work. Through the whole extent of the country you may travel everywhere without fear of sting or bite, for there is no ravenous beast, no venomous reptile, to be found. There are materials for a very comfortable bivouac. Wood and water for the fire and for cooking—palm leaves and fern for your couch, and you may speedily replenish your stock of provisions from the neighbouring

stream or bush. The rivers and seaboard are well stocked with fish, from the magnificent hapuka, or rock cod, through all the varieties down to the piharan, or delicate lamprey. I remember once, when voyaging in the mission boat, in Cook's Straits, my natives, with rude appliances, in about two hours, loaded the boat far more deeply than was desirable with baracoota. Then the forests, lakes, and rivers equally abound with feathered game, such as the kupuka, the kaka, the weka, the patangitangi. There are, moreover, the fern root, the mamuka, and other edible and succulent roots, and stems of native plants, from which in former times the natives derived a large portion of their subsistence. I think, therefore, by the way, that the rebellious natives are not to be readily starved into submission. They can live in comparative abundance in their native country, where a white man would starve. The best harbours on the coast have the least quantity of available land in their neighbourhood, as they are mostly hemmed in by high and rugged forest-clad mountains, rendering great outlay necessary in order to open up the country, while the finest plains and valleys, with hundreds of thousands of acres of rich and fertile soil, are without harbours at all—either an indifferent roadstead, like Taranaki, or a river with a frightful sandbar stretching across its mouth. The rivers and harbours on the west coast have all their sandbars at the heads. The prevailing westerly wind, meeting the current coming out of the river, raises a bar across the mouth,

on which, even in comparatively fine weather, the sea sometimes breaks with awful fury.

‘The middle island differs materially in its general features from the northern. There is a rugged mountain range, a great part of which is above the snow line, running down the island, from north-east to north-west, but through the whole distance it runs nearly along the western coast; its spurs run right down to the coast line, and deep blue water runs between them right up to the bases of the lofty hills, very much like the fiords of Norway, I should imagine. There are no soundings in some of the inlets—you might take the “Great Eastern” and moor her to the stately forest trees on the precipitous shore. The east side of the island presents the fine spectacle of splendid rolling prairies of rich natural grasses, varying in width from fifty to seventy, and, in some places, one hundred miles, to the foot of the western range. This grassy land, I am told, will carry in its wild state one sheep to the acre; in some places more than this. These rolling plains are as fine an agricultural and pastoral country as is to be found in the world. There are few natives on the island—not more than five thousand altogether. The climate is too cold for them, and the former cannibal raids of the northern tribes have greatly diminished the few residents. The settlers of the five provinces, into which the island is divided, have a glorious future before them. They have no fear of war with the natives; they are only just near enough to hear the

bursting of the storm. Everything there is fair and flourishing. Many useful and valuable minerals only wait the necessary capital for their development. To say nothing of the gold-fields, successful rivals of our own, there are copper, chrome, iron, plumbago, coal in abundance; and I quite expect that marvellous though the past of that island has been, its future will be more so.'

* * * * *

'They have derived great benefits from civilization. Their implements for husbandry, and for building their houses and canoes, were of the rudest description. It must have cost them weeks of patient labour to bring down a forest tree with their rude stone axe, of some six inches long and two or three inches broad, with a very blunt edge. Their dress was composed of flax mats of various degrees of fineness. I have seen Kaitaka mats of such a fine and beautiful texture, worked by native women, that they would grace the form of the loveliest of her sex. But all these things are passing away. Being well supplied with European tools and wearing apparel, their own rude substitutes are thrown aside. The Maori is very imitative; he soon knows how to use the tools of civilization. There is nothing in husbandry, or in the mechanical arts, that a native will not acquire, and in some instances he will surpass his teacher. His ingenuity in discovering means of increasing his ammunition during the present war is a marvel to the civilized soldier. Marble, copper.

tokens broken up into slugs, and other hard substances, serve him in the place of lead; while the exploded percussion-cap is made to serve over and over again, by putting in the phosphorized head of a vesta.

‘Ever since I have known the Maories, their numbers have been rapidly diminishing. Year by year, the decrease is great. In one valley, I remember, twenty-four years ago, with at least one thousand souls living there, not more than three hundred could now be found. A large proportion of the population is adult; in a careful census of the people of the district under my charge some years ago, I found five hundred men, three hundred and seventy-five women, and about two hundred and fifty children; and from late inquiries, it would appear that a like proportion obtains all over the country. If an epidemic visits the country, it makes fearful ravages among the poor natives—the measles having destroyed hundreds of the people.

‘I wish, with all my heart, they could have been preserved as a race. I hope the remnant may. But “the Lord reigneth.” His purpose in placing man on the earth was, that he should “be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it.” The poor Maori could not do this, and would not allow others to do it for him, so he is passing away. Noble efforts have been made by the British Government, by Christian missionaries, and by high-minded philanthropists, to serve him, and they have been so far a comparative failure. I cannot but grieve deeply over this untoward

result. But those beautiful and fertile islands will be the home of a healthy, happy, prosperous community—I hope a truly Christian one—and the remnant of the native race will blend among the descendants of our own people. If the dream of Macaulay about the future is to be realized, and a New Zealander in the coming age, seats himself on the broken arch of London Bridge to sketch the ruins of St. Paul's Cathedral, it is likely he will be an Anglo-New Zealander.'

CHAPTER IV.

SQUATTING.

RAPID APPROPRIATION OF TERRITORY—SQUATTAGE RIGHT—
RUNS AND BLOCKS—LAWS AFFECTING GRAZING—VALUE
OF STATIONS—GOLD DISCOVERY—UNSTOCKED RUNS—
WEEDES—SHEEP SCAB—FARM SERVANTS—HOUSE AC-
COMMODATION—CATTLE AND SHEEP STATIONS—SCHOOL-
MASTERS AND PHYSICIANS—FOUNDING OF TOWNSHIPS—
CAMP FOLLOWERS—SQUATTAGE HOMES—LAND AND LAND
LEGISLATION—ABSENTEEISM AND RESIDENT SQUATTERS.

A RIVER overflowing and bursting its embankments, rushing onwards and spreading itself out in all directions, may serve as an illustration of the advancing waves of population, and the mode of occupation of all the known territory of Australia. It has been owing to the enterprise of private individuals, and not to any action on the part of Government, that the land has been taken possession of and occupied. Government, with its tape and measuring line, has been completely distanced, and left helpless. Be it right or be it wrong, there it is—the stupendous system, the great Australian fact—*occupation of the land*, and all the use and benefit of the *land*, without purchase. This great fact is one

that never requires to be mentioned, as people will always be found ready enough, and in sufficient numbers, to embark in schemes which promise extraordinary returns of wealth, and it requires no bounty or inducement of any kind to assist and encourage them. On the occasion of the gold discovery, no step whatever was necessary on the part of the Government to induce the people to go a gold-digging, and there has always been found plenty of persons ready to occupy the land on the very favourable terms of not being necessitated to purchase it. The great natural wealth of the country spread over the surface—its adaptability to the grazing of sheep and cattle, and the great facility of transit, were inducements of no ordinary character in the race for riches to stimulate to acquisition and possession. The problem of the sudden rise and prosperity, and the remarkably rapid extension of occupation and settlement of the Australian colonies, is thus very easily solved. It is easy to point out some of the great public material advantages of squatting. All the natural wealth of the country is instantly reaped, and made as available as a field of ripe wheat and barley, whilst employment is provided for a great number of people. The occupiers of the land—that class of the community called *squatters* or *Crown-tenants*—not being required to purchase the land of which they hold possession, they enjoy the full use and benefit of every farthing of their capital; and it has been this extraordinary encouragement to capital which has made

Australia become what it is—caused it to be opened up—brought commerce and population to its shores—and provided employment for hundreds and thousands of famishing emigrants from the British isles. It is not to be forgotten that the first settlers were not required to purchase land, as they secured grants of territory from the governor, in consideration of their employing convicts, whose labour they secured free. The foundation was thus laid at the very commencement of Australian settlement, of a plan of colonisation which attracted emigrants by the encouragement which was given to capital, and that encouragement has prevailed ever since, and has thus led to the settlement of every known part of the continent. Money! money! An ass laden with gold has been known to enter a fortified city, where ten thousand armed men could not enter; and but for that great encouragement—the use of the land without paying for it—Australia would have long remained and been no better than a walled city. If the occupants of the Crown-lands reap, as it is usually said, all the benefits of the country, they must, at the same time, be considered as having rendered a large return, if not an equivalent for the privileges which they possess, in the employment of their capital, by making the natural wealth of the country serviceable for the public benefit. Without very great encouragement to capital, persons would never have been found to embark their money in an undertaking where the issues were problematical; with hazards

and uncertainties surrounding them on every side, and with no convenience of any kind, such as roads and bridges, nor public expenditure to meet public necessities. What centuries would have taken to accomplish, in purchasing the land before obtaining the use of it, squatting has accomplished within a comparatively short period of time. The squatter's life has not been altogether a smooth one, without difficulties; experience was to be gained, knowledge of country acquired, modes of management to be learned; besides, there were injurious influences at work, such as droughts, disease amongst stock, fluctuating prices in the London market, commercial crises in England—one of which nearly ruined every squatter in Australia. This is one side of the picture which is never looked at, and, indeed, completely ignored by many who cry out against the squatters—the croakers forgetting all the while that it was the painstaking, industrious hands of that class which were feeding them.

The land being taken possession of and appropriated by individuals, in accordance with Act of Parliament, a right of an important character has been acquired and grown up, namely, the squatter's right. Time has only added to the difficulty of meddling with that right, and increased the complications in which the whole subject is involved. Mr. First has sold his right of occupation to Mr. Second; Mr. Second has sold his right to Mr. Third, and the land has passed into the hands of Mr. Sixth, or Mr. Tenth; each one

having paid large sums for his right, with the exception of Mr. First, who, however, must also be regarded as having paid very largely for his right of occupation, in the expenses which he incurred in taking up the country, and the risk of life which he probably exposed himself to in 'brushes' with the aborigines. The Government, however, always insists upon its right to the land, and has never, on any occasion, acknowledged the right of compensation to the squatter—except for his improvements—when it takes away any of his land from him, for the purpose of selling it to others. The upset price of £1 per acre, which has puzzled so many, is easily understood; it was intended originally as a breakwater, to prevent the squattages from being seriously encroached on. There were also some public purposes which were intended to be served in fixing on the high price. Good land is very small in quantity in comparison with bad, and is usually found in streaks and patches on the sides of creeks and rivers. The holders of Crown lands, if permitted to purchase their streaks and patches of good land, would be in continued possession of the large area of bad land adjoining. The getting hold of these streaks and patches has been called 'picking the eyes out of the country,' and the high price of £1 per acre was intended for such land, and as a kind of protest against the spoiling of the country for purposes of future colonisation and settlement. William Charles Wentworth, orator, 'Shepherd King,' and inaugurator of responsible government in

Australia, estimated the value of the grass lands before the gold discovery, and when the prices of wool and tallow were very low, at three-halfpence an acre; and there is a great deal of land in the interior which might be said to be not fit for selling, especially in small quantities. A severe drought, such as that which occurred during the end of 1865, and the beginning of 1866, would be disastrous in the extreme to those whose property consisted chiefly of land. If the country was not liable to protracted droughts, and if there were seasonable showers of rain, the land, for grazing, might be said to be altogether invaluable, as cultivation could scarcely produce a better quality of grasses and herbage than those which are found growing naturally. The climate is hardly adapted to the growing of fine wool. Stations, or runs, vary in size from ten thousand acres to half-a-million of acres, according to the extent of country originally taken up by pioneers. A gentleman in the Survey department of New South Wales, employed by the Government in defining the boundaries between New South Wales and Queensland, mentioned to the writer the case of one gentleman who had taken up and occupied one hundred miles of frontage to a river! The boundaries between stations are usually all well defined—as much so, indeed, as the boundaries between gentlemen's or noblemen's estates in Great Britain, and are almost entirely determined and delineated by the falls of water into creeks or rivers, and by marks on the

trees. There seems to have been no restrictions as to the quantity of land which one individual might occupy; and the settler, as the pioneer or squatter may be fairly called, is not confined to one block; he may take up four, ten, or even twenty blocks, either all adjoining or in different parts. In Queensland, where the taking up of country has been going on of late years at a very rapid pace, much disappointment, and no small amount of loss of time and money, was sustained by many who had been trafficking in blocks—taking up country, and selling their right to it to others. A sudden stop was put to this by an Act of the Queensland Parliament, recognising no one's right to the country which he claimed unless he was in occupation, and had stocked it to the extent of one-fourth of its grazing capabilities. There were many who could, with no small degree of self-adulation, use the phrase, 'I am monarch of all I survey, my right there is none to dispute'—who were rejoicing over their acquired possessions, and had been at great trouble in marking their boundaries, and having their names registered in the Crown Land Commissioners' books as the rightful, because the first, claimants to the part of country. They found themselves, however, suddenly deprived of the fruits of all their vexatious toil and adventure—found that it was a mere shadow which they had been clinging to and trusting, unless in those cases where they had cattle or sheep to stock their country. Mr. Robertson, the Prime

Minister of New South Wales, publicly complained at the time how he and his partner had been baulked of their Queensland territory. They had neither sheep nor cattle upon it—some person, with sheep or cattle, had taken possession of it, and the Queensland Government recognised the man with the sheep and cattle as the proper claimant. Laws affecting grazing or squatting will be found to vary in all the Australian colonies, as also in New Zealand. In the case of the first occupiers—that is, those who have been the first to take up the country—the practice of the Government hitherto has been to grant a lease of fourteen years, and at the expiration of that period a renewal of the lease for ten or for five years. The stocks are at the same time liable to assessment, to meet the necessities of Government—dealt with as a whole, and are the great source of maintenance, the pillar of support of the colony. The assessment levied upon the stock will always be considered with regard to the interests of the graziers. If, instead of a penny per head of sheep, the squatters in Victoria had been called on to pay a shilling a head after the gold discovery, the increase in the assessment could not have been considered unjust, as sheep were largely increased in value. The mode, also, of making the squatters pay for the privileges which they might be supposed to possess, cannot be regarded as in any way unfair. The grazing capabilities of their runs are valued after the expiration of the fourteen years' lease by persons appointed by

the Government; and the occupier of a run of a hundred thousand acres may not have to pay so much as the occupier of a run of forty thousand acres—the run of forty thousand acres being estimated to carry more stock than the run of a hundred thousand acres. Besides, the squatter has always the remedy, when he thinks the Government valuation too high, of having the dispute settled by arbitration. The squatters in the older colonies of New South Wales and Victoria cannot complain of much injustice in having to pay more for their grazing than they do in Queensland, as they possess greater public advantages, such as roads and bridges, with a larger population, thus causing them to obtain better prices for their spare stock. Fifteen pounds a year for the use of as much land as will graze one thousand sheep, and twenty pounds a year for the use of as much land as will graze five hundred cattle, will not generally be considered exorbitant taxation or *rental*; besides, the land may, in favourable seasons, carry two or three times the quantity of stock above what is estimated. Previous to the gold discovery, runs were not of very great account, as the value of sheep and cattle consisted chiefly in the tallow which they would produce after having been boiled down, and the rights to parts of country as large as English or Scottish counties, with all the improvements upon them—sometimes very valuable—were sold at very low prices indeed. The same practice was adopted then as that which con-

tinues to be still in vogue. The station, with all the improvements, is given in with the purchase sum of the stock upon it, the price of the herd of cattle (which might range from eight to ten shillings; that of sheep from four to six shillings); and the person buying the sheep or cattle receives along with them the right to the country where they were grazing, with all the improvements upon it, such as dwelling-house, woolshed, huts, etc., including the right of brand to the unmustered cattle and horses. Before boiling down was thought of, and during a time of great depression, occasioned by a commercial crisis in England, stations, sheep, cattle, and horses sunk to an infinitesimal price, and might be said, indeed, to have had no marketable value. A story was told the writer by an old colonist, of a gentleman arriving in New South Wales at the period referred to from England, and purchasing several thousand sheep at sixpence a head: it was a very cheap bargain, he thought, and he calculated on realising a profit by driving them over and selling them in the Port Philip district. He failed in his reckoning, however; after the expenses of the journey, he had not left to himself sufficient money to pay the men whom he had engaged as drovers, and he could not find any one to purchase his sheep. It came at last to a parley; and he proposed to the drovers that they should take the sheep for their wages. This they consented to, and without any more ado he turned his back on his way to Sydney, leaving

the men with the sheep to make the best of their bargain.

The gold diggings brought about a revolution in the value of stock and stations, as they did in almost every other mercantile commodity; and no other description of property, perhaps, has been so much enhanced in value, and shown so little symptoms of decline. Population was all that was needed to bring money into the hands of the graziers, and the gold-diggings did this most effectually.

The consumption of animal food is very great in the Australian colonies. Beef or mutton is the principal article of dietary in the three meals a day, and every individual is estimated to consume a bullock in the year. From the increased price of sheep and cattle, stations were more than quadrupled in value, whilst a fresh impetus was given to the taking up of new country, aided and stimulated by the largely increased prices of wool and tallow in the London market. Practically, and speaking generally, the land for grazing is out of the hands of Government altogether, and if any one chooses to commence grazing or squatting in Australia or New Zealand, if he does not go and take up country, he need not go to the Government, but to those in occupation, and bargain with them.

There is occasionally country or stations which, from various causes, fall into the hands of Government; the principal cause being the desertion of those places. The Government adopts the usual course of disposing

of the right to these unoccupied stations by public auction. The following is a copy of a Government advertisement in one of the Sydney newspapers in reference to these stations :—

UNSTOCKED RUNS.

By order of the Government of New South Wales.

Day of Sale, MONDAY, 29th January next.

RICHARDSON and WRENCH have received instructions from the Honorable the Minister for Lands to sell by public auction, at the Rooms, Pitt Street, Sydney, on MONDAY, 29th January next, at 11 o'clock,

New Leases for Five Years of the several runs of Crown Lands hereinafter mentioned, upon the terms and conditions prescribed by the Crown Lands Occupation Act of 1861, and the regulations framed in pursuance thereof.

* * Full particulars of the boundaries of the several runs may be obtained upon application at Messrs Richardson and Wrench's Rooms, or from the GOVERNMENT GAZETTE, No. 272, of Friday, the 29th December last.

The special attention of intending purchasers is directed to the following clauses in the conditions under which the leases will be sold, viz. :—

The lease of each run for five years will be sold to the person who may offer the highest premium for the purchase thereof, and subject only to the annual rental specified.

The purchaser will be required to pay down at the time of sale a deposit equivalent to 25 per cent. of the premium (if any) offered for the lease, together with the rent computed from the 1st January to the 31st December 1866.

These runs will not be liable to assessment under the Increased Assessment and Rent Act of 1858.

CLARENCE DISTRICT.

No.				Estimated area.	
				Acres.	Rent.
1 Tomara	...	...	...	14,000	£11
2 Marydale	...	...	...	16,000	13

LACHLAN DISTRICT.

3 North Hyandra, ... ..	...	...	64,000	50
4 North-East Wallandra ... ..	...	...	64,000	50
5 Salmagundia ... ..	...	...	23,040	18

MONARO DISTRICT.

6 Murrah...	10,000	10
----------------	-----	-----	--------	----

MURRUMBIDGEE DISTRICT.

7 Argalond	16,000	13
-------------------	-----	-----	--------	----

NEW ENGLAND DISTRICT.

8 Mooraback	20,480	16
--------------------	-----	-----	--------	----

WELLINGTON DISTRICT.

9 Jumble Plains, block B ... ..	...	...	32,000	13
10 Ditto do. C ... ..	...	...	51,200	40
11 Ditto do. G ... ..	...	...	38,400	15
12 Corres Coule ... ..	...	...	16,000	13
13 Palisthan ... ..	...	...	64,000	100

The previous occupants of these stations had undoubtedly very good reasons for parting with their interest in them; and they most likely had been at very considerable expense in the erection of their homesteads. The objection to some of them might be a want of water, and in some seasons, especially in winter, too much water; another objection might be, that the country was scrubby and mountainous. The subject is

noticeable as illustrative of the variety of country, and of some districts which might be said to be scarcely worth having, or even to be ruinous to those in occupation. The country may be all generally described as beautifully grassed, and thinly timbered; but the grasses in some parts are more nourishing than they are in others. There is the distinction sometimes made between 'breeding' and 'fattening' country; and there is the same distinction to be made between all the pastured farms, some of which are more valuable than others. The greatest drawback to some of the best grazing land in Australia is the *grass* seed; the tufts of grass throw out long shoots of seed bearing stems like oats or barley, and when the seeds ripen, they come in contact with the wool of the sheep, and frequently prove injurious to the health of the animal by penetrating the skin. The 'thistle' and 'burr' are imported weeds, and are extremely destructive in districts where there is rich alluvial deposit of soil, laying it completely waste and absolutely useless, sometimes, indeed, worse than useless, for the grazing of sheep. Like the imported bees, they continue to spread farther and farther every year into the interior, the one, however, a curse, and the other a blessing—marching, as it were, arm-in-arm. On one station, thirty miles in length, and twenty-five in breadth—very favourably adapted for those pestilent weeds taking root and flourishing—consisting chiefly of flats of black soil, the owner had fifteen men employed at thirteen shillings a-week in the endeavour, if not to

extirpate, at least to keep them down. It was rather a hopeless undertaking, however, as the next flood would sow the land afresh with seed carried from the banks of the river. The owner was subsequently desirous of selling his station, which contained twenty thousand sheep, and about six thousand head of cattle, and for the whole, he was willing to take £25,000. This gentleman, who was a very old bush residenter, gave a singular account of himself. He had brought all his money with him from England in sovereigns the ship in which he was a passenger was wrecked, and his sovereigns, with the ship, went to the bottom of the sea; he got his foot safely on shore however, and was reduced to the position of a working man. Nothing daunted, he made his way into the interior and looked out for employment; he had been engaged as a shepherd in the station of which he was now the owner, and a rich relation had died and left him money^o sufficient to purchase the station from his employer. Besides grass seeds and burr, there is another great foe to the squatting kingdom. The greatest terror is always entertained of it, and every foe would seem to dwindle into insignificance in comparison. This is 'scab.' The most stringent laws are in force to prevent its spreading, and the only effectual method that would ever seem to have been discovered for its removal, is the same as that which has been applied for the removal of the 'cattle plague' in Great Britain—stamping out—slaughtering the whole flock of sheep, in which even one or two

sheep may be found affected; the Government awarding compensation to the amount of four shillings for every sheep thus killed, from a fund contributed by the graziers to the Government for the purpose; and those who fail to comply with these scab regulations, and do not kill all their flocks of sheep in which any of them may be found diseased, are heavily fined. Whilst travelling over a station, in which the stamping out process was going on, I saw thirty men engaged in the destruction of three thousand maiden ewes which had caught the disease from imported rams. The men appeared to do their work very systematically, but it was a fearfully revolting spectacle. There were carts driving dried timber, and men employed in making a funeral pile of it; with every layer of wood there was a layer of the newly killed sheep; higher and higher the pile of wood and wool, flesh and bones, was raised; and as the last carcase was heaved upon the top of the huge mass of the recently animated matter, a lighted match very speedily consummated the work that had been commenced, a finishing stroke to the work of absolute ruin and destruction in which they had been engaged. The men stripped themselves of all their outer clothing, in accordance with the terms of the Scab Act, and threw them into the flames.

There is a large, wide-spread ramification of streams and branches of labour and industry—all having their source and dependence upon squatting. Blocks of country necessarily require overseers, shepherds, and

stockmen; bullock drivers are also indispensable. The next important personage, a representative of labour following in the wake of capital, is the bush carpenter, for bush purposes—erecting huts, stack-yards, fencing and making hurdles. A bush carpenter is worth at least a dozen of his more pretentious town namesakes; with no other appliances than his axe, adze, morticing tool, and cross-cut saw, he is competent, with the assistance of another man, to do almost any kind of work in the carpenter line of business required in the bush. Temporary house accommodation is always easily provided by means of a few sheets of bark stripped from the neighbouring trees, one extremity resting on the ground, the other resting in a slanting direction on a pole a few feet above the ground, fixed on two forked sticks, in the shape of the roof of a house. This erection is called a *gungah*—the native style of house architecture, and the first approach that is made to house-building. A hut is an erection of a much more substantial character, and bears throughout all the usual marks in the delineation of a house, having a door, window, and chimney. The walls are made of split timber six or eight feet in length; one end sunk in the ground, the other standing upright, are either nailed to, or put into grooves in the wall plate. There are always two apartments, with holes of greater or less dimensions cut in the wooden walls for the purpose of admitting light, and serving as windows. There is

seldom, however, in any but a want of light, as the shrinking of the slabs causes innumerable openings in the walls all round and round, and light as well as fresh air are poured in as freely and bountifully as into a bird's cage in the open air. A hut is the kind of accommodation provided for shepherds and all the working-men employed at stations, and with which the owners themselves are contented on first starting their bush life. House-building is never regarded as a matter of much serious thought or concern; trees being plentiful, and some of them being remarkably well adapted for being split into slabs, which a bush-carpenter does very easily; and when required to bestow any extra amount of care and attention, he can make the split timber to appear as if it had come from a saw-pit. Shingles, that is, strips of split wood like slates, may be sometimes used for covering the roof, but bark, carefully taken off the trees, is generally employed. Neatness and comfort may be sometimes happily combined with very little expense. The owner of a squat-tage property, and fifteen thousand sheep, assured me that his dwelling-house, a remarkably neat and commodious building, of eight apartments, did not cost him more than sixteen pounds. He superintended the erection of it himself, and the unnecessary expense which he might have lavished on his house, he had expended in the cultivation of a garden and vineyard. There are not many hands required at cattle-stations, as aboriginal boys and men can always be readily obtained, when

needed, from the blacks belonging to the locality, who are always roaming about from place to place, and who very soon become domesticated; whilst their services are quite as valuable in the mustering of stock, if not more so, than the services of white men. There is also great economy in employing them, as clothing, tobacco, flour, and sugar is all the remuneration they ever think of. Sheep-stations are the great rendezvous of the labouring class of the population; and this is more particularly the case when the proprietor with his family reside in the station. In respect of the number of persons employed, and of the order and system of management, a large sheep-station might be said to differ little from a manufactory in a town. One large sheep-owner remarked to the writer, who was staying in his house, that he had one hundred mouths to fill all the year round; and at the busy season of sheep-shearing and harvesting, he had as many more to provide for. Lambing and sheep-shearing provide employment for a large number of persons engaged at other occupations, such as splitting, fencing, gold-digging, etc., during the remainder of the year. Two months' constant employment may be sometimes obtained at sheep-shearing by going from one part of country to another, according as sheep-shearing has progressed. The work is always done at so much per score of sheep—usually about four shillings, with rations; and good shearers are reported to clip as many as five and six score a day. None of

them, however, seem at all fastidious about clipping the skin off with the wool; the sheep are said, however, not to suffer in any way from the rough handling to which they are frequently subjected. The excessive dryness of the climate soon heals the wounds, and the blow-fly does not injure them. Sheep-shearers are also expected to wash the sheep previous to shearing, at the current rate of labouring men's wages. Shepherds are never called on to shear sheep; and, indeed, not one, perhaps, in fifty of the class of individuals usually engaged in shepherding could do it. There is a store at every station, belonging to the owner, which contains supplies of clothing, shoes, tobacco, crockery, and all the other necessities which individuals and families on the station might stand in need of, or be likely to ask for, thus saving them the very great inconvenience they would be exposed to in travelling long distances to have their wants supplied. The grazier in Australia is not only a grower of wool, but a dealer in slops, blankets, household utensils, saddles, shoes, etc. When there are two or three young families residing at the head-station, a schoolmaster will generally be found, who to the duties of teacher very frequently adds that of storekeeper. One seldom hears complaints of the want of teachers, as there are numbers of persons who have received a good education, dislike shepherding, and are unable to do manual labour, who take to teaching in families as a means of earning a livelihood, and securing for themselves a comfortable home. It is

very usual for shepherds, who have boys in their families shepherding, to be provided with family tutors. They can, of course, only be taught in the evenings, and the spare time at the teacher's disposal is very likely expended in such work as cultivating the garden. The want of medical attendance, one is very apt to suppose, must be severely felt in the thinly-populated pastoral districts, where there are squatters residing with their families; however, an arrangement is often entered into by contributing a sum of money in the shape of a bounty for the residence of a medical practitioner. There is also a fair sprinkling of individuals who have some knowledge of medicine and surgery, who can prescribe and 'put to their hands' in cases of emergency; whilst there are few of the squatters who are not provided with a 'medicine chest.' One regularly-qualified medical practitioner, acting as superintendent of a cattle-station, incidentally mentioned to the writer, when halting for the night at his house, that he had taken the situation because he could not conscientiously charge the fees which other medical men were doing—fees which appeared to him to be little better than robbery of unfortunate people. The climate is remarkably healthy, and in the case of working-men requiring constant medical attendance, there are Government hospitals in all the populated districts to which those persons are sent. Clergymen are few and far between, and are placed at an immense disadvantage, having literally no resting-place for their feet.

It may take one a whole day to travel over some man's run to see a family; and it is a very charitable interpretation, indeed, to say of the large bulk of the people, that they are living in a patriarchal state, and that every head of a family is the priest of his own house. There is one thing to be said in favour of many, if not the most of them, that they are always looking forward to a more settled mode of life.

The starting of a township is always regarded as a great event, and any one ambitious of perpetuating his name and handing it down to posterity as the founder of a city—perhaps the future capital of a great nation—may do so any day in Australia without exposing himself to the risk of much loss or inconvenience. The first to earn this honourable distinction is usually a bullock-driver, and all he has had to do has been merely to ask permission of the squatter, or the gentleman in whose employment he may have been, to erect a hut for himself and family at the crossing-place of the river, or some other eligible place on the station. Sheep increase, cattle increase, wealth increases—more labour is required, and population increases; the bullock-driver, in his long, toilsome journey to the coast, with his load of wool, brings back, on his return load, many things which he shrewdly guesses he can sell at an immense profit in the neighbourhood where he resides. He opens a store and does a thriving business; there is a petition to the Government for the running of a mail; and the

store having become a public place, conveniently situated, it is found suitable for the post-office. The Government is at last supposed to be alive to the occasion, and surveyors are despatched to lay out a township at the locality.

There is far more instinct than reason in many of the people, with their carefully-accumulated earnings. The allotments of land being put up for sale by public auction, they throw away their money in bidding against each other for such allotments as they may have set their hearts upon, when they purpose establishing themselves in the line of business to which they may have been bred, as shoemakers, tailors, saddlers, etc. Storekeeping and innkeeping invariably take the lead; and in some of the outlying townships, one individual may be sometimes found to hold in his hands all the business done in the place, and to be storekeeper, innkeeper, pound-keeper, postmaster, etc. Many of these worthies undoubtedly act very discreetly, and do not take too great advantage of their situation, in disposing of articles with which the settlers' stores are not provided; and it is to be hoped that the instance of one, mentioned in the hearing of the writer, as selling needles at a shilling a piece, was a purely exceptional case. Modern civilisation may have a great deal to recommend it, but there is a great deal of modern civilisation which bush people could easily afford to lose—the gratifying of the sense of novelty not at all compensating for the expense of

purchase. Travelling Jews with trinkets, organ-grinders, German bands, Ethiopian serenaders, circuses, electro-biologists, and people of that class, are great nuisances in the embryo townships. Photographers might claim for themselves exemption from being classed with the useless train of camp-followers. One of these persons with whom I met in the far-bush, and who had been the first in the field, stated that in a short time he had accumulated ten thousand pounds; and as he thought that he might as well enjoy the fruits of his earnings, he went on a trip to England. After spending all his money he returned to the bush to recruit his finances; but to his great disgust he found the whole country, wherever he went, overrun with photographers, spreading themselves out like a string of wild geese, and could not get an opening: at every place he went to, indeed, there had been a photographer before him; and he was obliged to change his occupation, and as the people had all their *cartes de visite* of their heads *outside* taken, he commenced to take and give *cartes de visite* of their heads *inside*—phrenological charts.

The sheep-farmers would seem to be of opinion that, from the description and quality of labour thrown into their hands from on board emigrant ships—like raw material sent ashore to be converted into useful purposes—a knowledge of the management of men is an important branch in the knowledge of their business, and as much to be attended to as the management of

stock. In fact, the same talents are required for a successful sheep-farmer as those that go to make a good drill-sergeant. To teach others, they require to be well taught themselves—to know everything—to see everything done by everybody—and to be first and foremost in everything. It is not easy to persuade some 'new arrivals' of this, and there are some very slow, and some unwilling to learn. Mr. Gruther, owner of several large squattages, who had a world of hard, rough Australian experiences hid within his breast, had consigned to him from England two young relatives to indoctrinate into the mysteries of sheep-farming, and to lead them in the same path as that by which he had been conducted to opulence. He was as kind to them as any one could have desired. After an early breakfast, one morning, he asked them to go with him to the wash-pool, where the men were washing the sheep, previous to shearing. It was a very busy time, and every one was employed. Mr. Gruther was a man of few words, and on arriving at the wash-pool, he said to his young friends, 'Strip, strip.' They could not believe that he meant them to divest themselves of their superfinery and go into the dirty pool amongst the men; but Mr. Gruther was in earnest, and, without saying another word, watching his opportunity, when they were both standing near each other on the brink of the wash-pool, he placed a hand on the back of each and shoved them both in, superfinery and all.

Not the least of the many important considerations connected with squatting, is the claim which has come to be established, and recognized, of *bona fide* settlement; and the statement made in the preceding chapter of 'no attachment being formed to place' would require to be corrected here, for through the lapse of time a very strong attachment will sometimes be formed to place—and the best evidence of this is in the stylish mansions, houses, gardens, and vineyards, which are occasionally met with at stations where the proprietor resides, and it is scarcely possible for fancy to conjure up more pleasant homes, and luxurious retreats from the rude bustle of the world, than some of these squattage residences. Through the effect of the operation of the great law of custom, it will generally be found that the man who pays his yearly rental, say forty pounds, for the land, from which he is grazing three or four thousand sheep, or a thousand head of cattle, feels his position in every way as good as the man who purchases his forty acres for forty pounds. This observation applies to the large bulk of squattage properties. No doubt the squatter may be deprived of his property when the Government requires the land with a view to selling it, as it may be stated, for public uses or for agriculture. *To what public uses, however, can the great bulk of the land be applied than that to which it is already applied—grazing?* And as to agriculture and twenty shillings an acre, very little indeed can ever be cultivated and

sold at twenty shillings an acre. There was one squatter in Queensland, known to the writer, who had twelve thousand acres taken off his run by the Government for the purpose of selling it to land-order emigrants. In a large squattage of a hundred thousand, or two hundred thousand acres, twelve thousand does not count for much, and in this instance, as in others, the gentleman who had lost this portion of his run very likely found the remainder enhanced in value—a market being brought to his door for his stock. The subject is well understood—the squatter purchases as little land as possible; the purchase of land he always regards as throwing away money, and when he does purchase, it is merely to keep others off his run. Buying land is an English idea, and were a real Australian settler asked to buy the land of which he holds possession, at a pound an acre, he would look with as much blank astonishment as a captain of a vessel would do in mid-ocean, if Neptune, with his trident, suddenly rose from the deep and asked him to buy the salt water of which he was obtaining the use and benefit. But squatters do buy land—they are, in fact, very partial to the buying of land—that is, certain spots on their runs by buying which they can secure themselves in possession of large adjoining areas of their grazing land; and they have derived enormous advantages from '*pre-emption right*'—the right in the first place of purchasing a square mile of the land where the head station is situated, and

from the scarcity of available land which may occur at intervals in streaks and patches, this may include, in no small number of instances, all the available land on the run.

Every one has heard of the Victoria great land swindle, and the great tossing up of cabbage-tree hats by the squatters there during the administration of the land in that colony by Mr. Gavin Duffy, of *The Irish Nation* fame. Nothing could have exceeded the ovation given Mr. Duffy, on his arrival, by the radical brotherhood of Sydney and Melbourne. 'The right man in the right place.' A testimonial in money was given to him, to enable him to support the dignity which they intended to bestow upon him, in the shape of high legislative honours in Victoria. Daniel O'Connell used to say that a carriage-and-four could be driven through any Act of Parliament; had he lived, he might have seen an Act of Parliament, made by his henchman, in which the rights to three millions of acres of the best land in Victoria were driven through an Act by card shuffling, dodging—making use of what, in colonial phrase, is called 'dummies.' In New South Wales, where radical rule also prevails, in the case of a squatter who wished to retain hold of his run, when in danger of losing it by others coming in and settling upon it, the wife of his overseer said to me, that the infant at her breast, and the rest of her children, were 'free selectors'—that is, the owner of the station had made use of their names in picking up the best parts of the run, not for the land itself, but to

remain in undisturbed possession of the grazing land adjoining. This is, in general, very easily done, from the peculiar geographical character of the country, and by purchasing the narrow strip of alluvial land at the sides of creeks, rivers, and water-holes. The immense areas of country without water are absolutely valueless, save to those who are in possession of these water frontages. The Government of New South Wales cannot be supposed to be ignorant of the fact that dodges, such as that related above, are practised, and of the spoliation, or 'manipulation' of the Crown lands, as the *Sydney Morning Herald* calls it. Several merchants and others in Sydney having interest in runs, frankly confessed to the Minister of Lands—Mr. Robertson—in remonstrating with him on the enormities of his Land Act, that they had practised these dodges themselves.

‘The good old rule, the simple plan,
That they shall take who have the power,
And they shall keep who can.’

All this has taken place, and is taking place, under radical rule. The Government of Queensland is more conservative, however, than the Governments of Victoria and New South Wales, not being so liberal, or, to speak more correctly, so prodigal of public property, whilst they would seem to be influenced by the consideration that the colony will last longer than their life-time, and that the world is not yet

coming to an end. Hence, the squatters in Queensland are not permitted to 'dodge,' botch, make use of 'dummies,' purchase select parts of their runs, simply to keep others off, or to destroy the country for all purposes of future colonisation and settlement.

One is entirely driven out to sea in not knowing what to think of squatting, in regard to its most important political bearings. The grass land is necessarily limited, and it is not every one who can share in the boon of having sixty thousand, one hundred or two hundred thousand acres of land at a small rental. The squatters are a privileged class of the community, and are therefore regarded with great disfavour and jealousy by those classes of the community who are called the people, *par excellence*, and none but those who have lived at the antipodes can understand the antagonism which exists between them. Over the larger extent of the interior, throughout nearly the whole of Queensland, where all the people are more or less connected with, and dependent upon, squatting, the people live agreeably together. But when population increases, and other interests spring up, the whole social body festers with sores—as if man were not brother to man.

The appropriating of select parts of country under the name of *agricultural reserves*, exclusively for the benefit of purchasers of land, was a most beneficial act on the part of the Queensland Legislature—an act which reflects the highest credit on the Government of that colony, standing out, as it does, in striking con-

trast to the 'go anywhere' system of New South Wales, and the 'house that Jack built' land legislation of Victoria. The land question is an interminable subject of discussion. It has broken out afresh in Queensland, and the following extract from the *Queensland Guardian*, in reference to the most favoured part of that colony, the Darling Downs, which is called 'the garden of Queensland,' will illustrate some of the causes of disaffection :—

APPRAISEMENT OF RUNS ON THE DARLING DOWNS.

The following are the appraisements made by Mr F. Gregory of the rent to be paid on the undermentioned runs, on the Darling Downs, during the five years' renewed leases, commencing January 1, 1866 :—

Gowrie, Frederick Neville Isaac, 70,000 acres—£583, 6s. 8d.
Goombunga, Frederick Neville Isaac, 50,000 acres—£123, 6s. 8d.

Westbrook, J. D. M'Lean and W. Beit, 113,722 acres—£628, 14s.

Rosalie Plains, W. Kent, jun., and E. Wienholt, 100,000 acres—£250.

Jingi Jingi, S. Murray, 128,000 acres—£208, 6s. 8d.

Gooranga, T. J. P. and J. A. Bell, 125,000 acres—£412.

Jimbour, T. J. P. and J. A. Bell, 219,911 acres—£685, 3s. 8d.

Fairy Land, S. Murray, 17,230 acres—£27.

Seven Oaks, ditto, 11,520 acres—£18.

Canago, ditto, 20,480 acres—£32.

Palican, ditto, 32,000 acres—£50.

Irvingdale, R. Tooth, 88,154 acres—£363, 6s. 8d.

Tumaville, W. F. Gore and M. B. Baldoek, 130,000 acres—£478, 14s. 8d.

- Pilton, H. B. Fitz and W. Wilson, 34,788 acres—£153, 8s.
 Northbranch, W. F. Gore and M. B. Baldock, 80,720 acres—
 £232.
 Haldon, H. B. Fitz and W. Wilson, 43,295 acres—£118,
 6s. 8d.
 Jondaryan, R. Tooth, 115,859 acres—£523, 6s. 8d.
 Cecil Plains, J. Taylor, 172,801 acres—£405, 6s. 8d.
 Yandilla, W. F. Gore and M. B. Baldock, 229,360 acres—
 £708, 2s. 8d.
 Lagoon Creek Downs West, W. Kent, jun., and E. Wien-
 holt, 21,760 acres—£70.

With reference to those assessments the *Queensland Times* says:—The assessed rentals on certain stations on the Darling Downs, which appear in another column, show that, for the next five years, 1,800,000 acres of the best and most favourably situated land in the colony is to be held by its present occupants for about £6,000 per annum, or at a rate of a little over three farthings per acre. We had expected something better than this—especially as the idea of disposing of the fee simple of the poorest and the most remote runs in the north at half-a-crown an acre has been so scornfully scouted. And yet half-a-crown an acre purchase money would be equal (even at only five per cent.) to three-halfpence an acre per annum, or just double what Mr Gregory calls on the occupiers of the 'garden of the colony' to pay for the next five years. There is something rotten in the state of Queensland. No doubt the present rental of these runs is a great advance on what was paid before, but this is nothing to the point. The rents of runs in South Australia, with fewer advantages than the Downs stations of Queensland enjoy, were some time since assessed at about sixpence an acre per annum, and this rental, in many instances, is now being paid. We regard these Queensland valuations as disgraceful. Sixpence an acre per annum would have been a moderate rent. The most miserable run in the

colony, however distant from port, will have to pay a half-penny per acre per annum; and yet these stations, with railways being made to their gates, and enjoying every advantage, are only to pay an average rental of three farthings. It has been said that the lessees will probably not give up their leases, but accept of the appraisal, and we rather incline to the same opinion.

The whole subject of squatting, in so far as Queensland is concerned, may be understood to be correctly stated in the manifesto published by the Queensland Government—one hundred and thirty thousand copies of which have been circulated in Great Britain for the information of intending emigrants. The squattages are let on fourteen years' leases, but are to be re-valued at that period. The rent for the first four years is merely nominal, with a view to the encouragement of enterprise in taking up new country, and is increased according to circumstances during the two succeeding periods, each one of which will be five years. The quantity of country held in one block is limited to two hundred square miles, and must be stocked with sheep or cattle to the extent of one-fourth of its estimated capabilities during the first year. Grass lands are estimated to carry and to fatten one hundred sheep or twenty head of cattle per square mile. The rent for the first four years is ten shillings per square mile; during the first of the two succeeding, not less than £25, nor more than £50, per 'block' of twenty-five square miles; and, during the second period of five

years, not less than £30, nor more than £70 per block.

Some new faculty would actually seem to be necessary to enable one to understand many antipodean matters rightly. It is something strange, and indeed altogether *outré* to European comprehension, that while purchasers of land in many of the Australian colonies will be required to reside on their property, and not be permitted to purchase more than three hundred and twenty acres, one who did not purchase land, that is, the squatter, may hold possession of hundreds of thousands of acres here, there, and everywhere, whilst he may reside in Sydney, Paris, London, or, indeed, anywhere he may choose. In the case of these absentees and large holders of Crown lands, there are evils connected with squatting which cannot be easily defended—one holding possession of as much land as would provide for the comfortable settlement of hundreds of families. Thorough masters of the art of avoiding expense, very frequently no interest of any kind will be found to have been taken in the individuals and the families in their employment. A few tumble-down bark huts may be all that represents the homestead of a property valued at twenty or thirty thousand pounds. One of these large holders of Crown lands, a partner in a company, boasted to me that he and his partners could send into market every year twelve thousand head of fat cattle, independently of spare stock, such as ‘boilers’—that is, cattle only fit for boiling down. Australia was

surely intended for other purposes than the enriching of a few individuals. The 'Crown lands' are very frequently, in Government phrase, styled 'the waste lands of the Crown.' They cannot, however, with propriety be called waste lands, for they are applied to the only purpose, speaking of them in general, to which they can ever be applied—grazing. Hundreds of miles of country may be travelled over, and not as much good land come to as would make a cabbage-garden, or a ten-acre field for cultivation. If there is no favourable opinion to be entertained of absentees, credit is due to those squatters who do reside on their stations, giving employment to domestic servants, labourers, and their families. Those men carry civilisation with them into the bush, and they will always be found alive and ready to lend a helping hand to every good work which may be going on around them; and the fact is worthy of mention, that they are uniformly distinguished for unbounded kindness and hospitality to clergymen. Stations are of greater or less size, and, as we have remarked, they change hands very frequently. When they are sold, the usual practice is sale by public auction of the sheep, cattle, and horses upon the station at so much per head—the station, with all the improvements given in, stores, drays, and all that is used in the working of the estate, taken at valuation. The prices would seem to be regulated by the prices of wool and tallow in the London market. Stations are sometimes sold, however, without stock, though somewhat rarely.

An owner of several squattages, in whose house I was staying, incidentally mentioned in my hearing to a gentleman beside him, that he had purchased 'the B——k run—sheep twenty-five a-head.' This was an enormous price, as the selling price of sheep was not more than eight or ten shillings a-head. An explanation ensued—it proved to be an A 1 run, and would carry fifty thousand sheep; there were only twenty thousand sheep upon it.

The following advertisement, published in a late number of the *Sydney Morning Herald*, of a station for sale belonging to a resident squatter, and situated in the Alpine regions, where the climate is favourable for English gardening and agriculture, contains much information of the minutiae of squatting :—

RICHARDSON and **WRENCH** have received instructions to sell by auction, at the Rooms, Pitt Street, Sydney, on **TUESDAY**, the 27th day of **MARCH** next,
At 11 o'clock.

**FOR POSITIVE SALE,
TENTERFIELD.**

* * Stores, Drays, Teams, Working Horses, Implements, Machinery, and all belongings necessary for carrying on such an important property, to be taken by valuation in the usual way by arbitration.

TERMS LIBERAL.

One-fourth Cash, residue by bills at 1, 2, and 3 years' date, bearing interest at the rate of 3 per cent. per annum, secured on the property by mortgage in the usual way.

Tenterfield is entitled to a lease for five years, from 1st January 1866, at £350 per annum.

Application has been made to the Government to set apart water reserves for the use of the back country, and to protect said reserves from free selection. The applications are in course of being granted.

TENTERFIELD.

This station is situated on the table-land of New England, on the head of the Severn River, or Tenterfield Creek, and 110 miles from the shipping port of Grafton, to which there is a very good road. Some part of the country consists of open plains, the principal portion being lightly timbered, well grassed, undulating ridges, and on all parts of the run are well-sheltered ridges.

It contains an area of about 180,000 acres, and is estimated as capable of depasturing 35,000 sheep and 2500 cattle, and their yearly increase in all seasons.

THE IMPROVEMENTS at the head station comprise a commodious and handsome cottage residence, containing 9 rooms, and verandahs, arranged and finished in superior style; a well-stocked garden, orchard, and vineyard; also, a beautiful grove of English forest trees.

The out-buildings include kitchen and servants' rooms, laundry, stores, 5-stall stable, groom's quarters, harness rooms, coach-house, etc.

Among the other improvements are the following:—Woolshed, 100 feet long, shingled, with sawn and slabbed floor, battened catching-pens, powerful screw-press, sheep-room capable of holding 1500 sheep, shingled, and the necessary yards attached. Wash-pool, with yards, large brick-built store, containing office and six other compartments, one of which is used for storing wool, and one for wheat, etc. Store-keeper's cottage of four rooms, with kitchen and meat-house.

Blacksmiths' and carpenters' shops, men's huts, mostly built of brick, small stockyard, horse ditto, milking ditto, slaughtering ditto, etc., boiling-down establishment, with the necessary pots, yards, and other conveniences. Grass paddock, sub-divided, of about 400 acres. Cultivation-paddock, of about 100 acres.

At the cattle-station, are

Large stock-yard, with spaying-pens, herding-paddock, grass ditto, of about 50 acres, sub-divided. Dairy, stockmen's huts, etc., and

At the sheep-stations,

15 huts, with the necessary yards to each, and hurdles for lambing, all now in full working order.

With the TENTERFIELD STATION will be included 320 ACRES OF PURCHASED LAND, on which the head-station improvements are erected. The following are the stock which will be sold with the station, viz. :—

Sheep.—2218 ewes, $1\frac{1}{2}$ years old.

2803 ditto, $2\frac{1}{4}$ do., with lambs at foot.

2608 ditto, $3\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

1257 ditto, $4\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

3558 ditto, $4\frac{1}{2}$ and $5\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

703 ditto, ditto, ditto, ditto, a stud flock.

1127 ditto, 6 and upwards.

6788 wethers, mixed sexes, in about equal proportions.

1158 mixed ages and sexes.

2121 wethers, $1\frac{1}{2}$ years old.

1311 ditto, $2\frac{1}{4}$ ditto.

1396 ditto, $3\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

1510 ditto, $4\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

1004 rams, $1\frac{1}{2}$ ditto, to aged.

Total, 29,562 more or less.

Cattle—2800, more or less, a mixed herd.

Implements, in which are included reaping machine, thrashing ditto, winnowing ditto, ploughs, harrows, etc., tools of various kinds, stores, about 1000 bushels of wheat or flour therefrom, stack of oaten hay, about 8 tons, and about 70 bushels of maize.

The sheep are free from all contagious diseases. They are of very superior quality, and yield a heavy clip. Great expense has been incurred in introducing the choicest rams procurable; of the present stock of rams, 5 are pure bred Rambouillet, 7 pure German, and all imported. About one-half the flock are young sheep, the progeny of the imported rams and stud ewes that have been carefully selected. Others are bred from the celebrated Glengallan, Rosenthal, and other first-class flocks. A large proportion of the Tenterfield clip averaged in London, in the last August sales, over 2s per lb., the wool being only hand-washed. The sheep have been regularly classed, and the rejected and old ones sold off every year.

CHAPTER V.

GOLD-DIGGING.

DISTRIBUTION OF GOLD—PROSPECTING—A RUSH—LIFE AT THE DIGGINGS—MODES OF SEARCHING—DIFFERENT KINDS OF GOLD—A PERSISTENT DIGGER—QUARTZ AND QUARTZ ROCKS—DIAMONDS AND PRECIOUS STONES—AN ENGLISH GOLD-MINING COMPANY—EXPLODING UNNECESSARILY—GOLD ESCORT—LUCKY DIGGERS—OLD CONVICT DIGGERS—WANDERING AND UNSETTLED LIFE AT THE DIGGINGS—AMERICAN TRADERS—A CARGO OF COFFINS—CHINESE SETTLERS, AND CHINESE SWINDLERS—INTRODUCTION AND PERMANENCE OF GOLD-DIGGING—UNSATISFACTORY MODE OF LIFE OF DIGGERS.

DAME FORTUNE would seem, at some time or other, to have been careering in a chariot over the summits of the Australian Alps, sowing as she went handfuls of gold dust, and pieces of gold; but all which she scattered thus bears no proportion to the quantities which, as if she had been blindfolded, she permitted to escape from her chariot as it coursed along in a zig-zag way, apparently without any determinate route or boundary—the gold running out from the chariot, and left in streaks and

patches, like meal, or wheat, on the road in the line of travelling of a dray filled with badly-tied sacks. The illustration is not precisely accurate, however, for the gold is buried in the soil; but it may serve to convey some idea of the distribution of gold. It is scarcely possible to wash carefully a tin dishful of earth, sand, or gravel, in the gold-producing tracts of country, without discovering a minute particle of gold—a speck just large enough for the eye to discern in the bottom of the dish, after all the earth, gravel, or sand has been carefully washed out, the gold, in consequence of its greater weight, always sinking to the bottom. This is called ‘prospecting,’ and the number of specks in the bottom of the dish determines the richness or the poverty of the soil in gold. Prospecting is not confined to the surface of the ground, however, as a hole, several feet in length, is generally dug, or a shaft may sometimes be sunk in the same way as in sinking for a well, to test the ground underneath. Rewards are given to the discoverers of new gold-fields, and a bonus of several ‘claims’ granted of the gold-field which they have discovered. If a ‘rich prospect’ is fallen upon, and the ground is found to be payable, a new gold-field is said to have been discovered, and there is nothing wanting but ‘diggers’ to make matters ‘go a-head.’ If any of them are reported to be ‘doing well,’ and especially if any of them make ‘large finds,’ the news from the new gold-field is spread far and wide with the speed of lightning.

Storekeepers, innkeepers, and others in the neighbourhood, on the main thoroughfares leading to the locality, and all others interested in the new field, give the most flattering accounts of how much this, and how much that party has made; all being stated with great accuracy, to save themselves from the risk of some rather unpleasant consequences which have sometimes followed from diggers who have come from long distances running foul of, and awarding merciless punishment to, those who gave false or exaggerated information. The news from the new gold-field, which is heralded by the press principally on the authority of local correspondents, being very favourable, there is a 'rush' towards it. 'Distance lends enchantment to the view,' and it is very frequently observed that those gold-diggers who have been remote and unsuccessful are the first to arrive at the new gold-field. Whilst traversing a bush-track, where there were not more than twelve grown-up persons residing within sixty miles length of country, two men, hangers-on at a wayside, or, as it is frequently termed, an 'accommodation-house,' where I halted for the night, took to the work of 'prospecting'—discovered a rich prospect, found a cradle, commenced washing in the usual manner, and made large earnings. The news soon spread abroad, and within three weeks there were about fifteen hundred persons collected within half a mile length of a creek, where the two men had been working. The sudden change was very surprising,

and it would be difficult to imagine any other circumstance save the discovery of gold which could have attracted so large a population, within so brief a period, into Nature's previously almost untenanted domain. There was no road, merely bush tracks leading from station to station—very high and steep mountains had to be crossed, ascended and descended, some parts of which were very thickly timbered, whilst creeks and gullies opposed, one would have thought, almost insurmountable obstacles to traffic. Gold! what will the love of gold not lead men to do? Hardships, dangers, difficulties, all the great bugbears which make people shrink from doing what they are not inclined to do, seemed all to disappear like an idle dream. Provisions were sold at an enormously high price. If eight bullocks could not ascend the mountain with a loaded dray, twenty-four with a half-loaded dray might, and must; one team assisting the other, the bullocks stimulated by endless shouting, their drivers, worked to the highest pitch of frenzied excitement, goading them, at the same time, with the butt-end of their whip-handles. One by one the loaded drays, slowly, but perseveringly, reach their destination up and down hill, through deep ravines in the mountains, over gullies, creeks, and swamps: assistance seeming always to be readily given by the one to the other, when assistance is required. An Australian bullock-driver would seem to flinch at nothing in travelling with his dray—no matter how rough and mountainous the country may be, if the bullocks can stand on their feet, he will make them

take the dray after them. It is a marvellous sight when they are coming down the face of a steep mountain, with a heavily loaded dray; but on a closer view one sees that the apparently difficult operation is adroitly managed by means of a heavy tree attached behind the dray, trailing on the ground. Bullock-drivers have not the least of the arduous work in connection with gold-digging; and it is to be hoped that their usual heavy charges compensate for their toil and adventure. They are the carriers on the road; but there are numbers who are their own carriers, and are provided with horses and carts which contain all the necessary supplies of tools and provisions. In the line of a 'rush,' and in the great cavalcade of men on horseback, with their blankets strapped before them on their saddles, they are very conspicuous. The pedestrians are by far the most numerous, however; they have all their *swags* on their backs; some bear shovels and picks, whilst others are without them—grudging the labour of carrying utensils, and relying on purchasing them from the storekeepers. There are vehicles, too, of every description to be met with, forming what seems to be an endless procession, as if some entire settlement had broken up, or the people were all hastening away from a plague; and not the least marked feature in the 'rush,' and ceaseless stream of human life, are the neatly tilted carts, in which are comfortably housed mothers and their young families, with their goods and chattels. The worst of it is to come. There is a risk, a trouble-

some anticipation that John, the father of the family, and his two partners, Peter and James, who accompany the cart, might not strike upon a 'good claim.' There is some consolation, however, derived from the thought of having no house, no fuel, and no water to pay for; besides, there is plenty of fresh air, whilst beef and mutton are usually cheap, and, if the wife is an industrious woman, she can provide for herself and live independently of her husband's earnings, by doing washing and cooking for diggers; hence there is nothing to prevent the family from enjoying many domestic comforts. Where a family is residing, a plot of ground is very frequently observed near the dwelling, which is fenced, and cultivated as a garden. In addition, many of the diggers' families have cows and carry on dairy work. Houses of every conceivable construction are 'run up' in a very short time; timber being usually abundant, whilst the bark of trees serves to cover the roof of 'shanty,' 'log-house,' 'hut,' 'house,' or by whatever name the erection is called. Stores and inns are usually of a more pretentious character, and some expense is incurred in the use of sawn timber in flooring and weather-boarding those establishments. Calico tents are the prevailing house accommodation, however, being easily erected, and as easily removed. Without perhaps a single exception, a 'claim,' that is, a plot of ground, it may be about the size of a cottage garden, staked out by the Gold Commissioner and his officials, is taken up and worked by a 'party.' The party may

consist of three, four, six, or eight persons, all well known to, and having confidence in each other, and between whom disagreements very rarely take place.

A gold-field is a place of bustling industry. Every one seems to be intent on his own affairs, and indifferent to those of others, whilst there is an appearance of order, quietness, and regularity observed, which would surprise many who have conjured up in their imaginations such scenes of wildness and disorderliness as they may have read of in public prints. Lines of streets may be sometimes passed, and the eye be greeted with all those designations on sign-boards, such as tailor, shoemaker, watchmaker, bank, baker, surgeon, etc., which are to be met with in any large town, without a single omission.

There is 'rowdyism' to be witnessed sometimes, no doubt, especially on Saturday nights, when groups of men gather round public-houses, some of them 'knocking down their money' and 'giving shouts,' but this remark is very far from applicable to the general character of the digging population. There are many most respectable persons and families to be met with at a gold-field; many who have received the highest education in schools and universities, who have always moved in spheres of good society, and who are in no way ashamed of their employment; a life, as I have heard some of them say, of entire freedom and independence. As a body, indeed, the diggers might compare favourably with any of the other labouring classes in the community.

At some of the fields there are parties to be seen finding gold in a manner which any one sufficiently able to handle a pick and shovel would seem competent for, there being mere digging and washing of sand, clay, and gravel, in the beds of water-courses, with 'surfacing.' In the process of 'surfacing,' the earth on the surface is dug one, two, or three feet, thrown into a cart or wheelbarrow, and cast into a trough, into which water is conducted and kept constantly running. The earth, clay, and gravel, is continually stirred, by means of shovels and forks, by two men; and the gold, usually in very small quantities, about the size of threepenny pieces, falls to the bottom of the trough, and escapes along with small stones through a sheet of perforated iron at the further extremity. Large holes like gravel pits may also be frequently seen, in which the same operation is gone through with the gravel, earth, or clay, which may have been dug out of them. This is called 'shallow sinking.' By far the most common, and it may therefore be supposed to be the most remunerative method of finding gold, however, is sinking shafts ('deep sinking,' as it is termed), and the preliminary labour in this case is similar to that of sinking for a well, the object being to come upon the original deposits—Dame Fortune's streaks and patches. The work in this case is of a most laborious nature, and only such persons as Cornish miners, who, by the way, have proved themselves to be first-rate hands at gold-digging, and others who have made

mining an occupation and a study, are properly competent for the task. A practical knowledge of geology is also necessary; and this every one learns quickly at the diggings from those two excellent teachers, observation and experience. The 'bed-rock' is a favourite word with the diggers, being the depth to which the shaft is sunk, and beyond which there is no labour required in sinking deeper; the shaft is said to be 'bottomed' when the bed-rock has been struck. The bed-rock reached, all that is necessary is to scrape with a trowel the sand and gravel which may be upon it, also the washing-stuff and whatever may be the thickness of the deposit; the material is then put into a bucket as it is collected; and, when the bucket is filled, it is attached to a rope hanging down the mouth of the shaft, and is drawn up by the man who is stationed at the windlass. This washing-stuff is destined to go through the same process as all other washing-stuffs; but in most cases it is put into 'cradles.' A great quantity of gold has sometimes been found in one of these bucketfuls after it has been washed; and when the 'claim' is rich, great care is taken of the washing-stuff after it reaches the surface, and is thrown into a heap beside the mouth of the shaft, in case night prowlers might make free with it. The process of tunnelling is carried on underneath, on the surface of the bed-rock, and to the same extent as the claim above. There is danger in this part of the operation, and lives have been lost from want of proper attention to the use of props for preventing the earth and stones

from falling down overhead. Shafts are of various depths, according to the elevation or depression of the much-famed bed-rock, or the height and depth of the stratification of sand, gravel, or clay, in which the gold is found. Boulders of granite and solid rock have to be pierced through frequently, and blasting with gunpowder at great depths is not the least risk to the life of the gold shaft-sinker; water may also come in at times and stop operations altogether, whilst fresh air must be pumped down the shaft continually, to enable the digger to breathe freely in his narrow and confined cell. One man told me that he had been in a shaft six hundred feet deep. Next to the bed-rock, the 'lead of the gold' is the great object of the shaft-sinker. If he has been fortunate in striking on the gold, there is a course or a direction in which it can be followed, and he is successful so long as he can follow the 'lead,' but if he loses the 'lead' all his labour is lost. A shaft may be sunk at very great expense—month after month being occupied in the work, and all of no avail. Even if the digger strikes the bed-rock, he may not strike the lead of gold, and in this case it is called a 'shicer,' a most ominous term with diggers.

There is a great amount of business done in shares of claims. A party of diggers may not have the pecuniary means to enable them to go to the bottom of the shaft, but storekeepers, and others who are possessed of money, are 'wide-awake,' and are

always ready to have a chance of reaping a rich golden harvest easily, by advancing money to the party, and receiving in return a share in their claim. The washing-stuff is usually dug out before washing commences; and those interested are present at the close of the day's labour for the purpose of seeing the drawer, or wooden box, into which the gold has fallen in the process of rocking the cradle. If a man lifted a piece of gold out of the cradle, or washing-stuff, unknown to the other men of the party, it would be regarded as a serious misdemeanour. Such occurrences are rarely, if ever, heard of, however. There are many singular stories told by the diggers of their 'claims.' After having expended all their money in sinking a shaft, they sometimes lose hope of ever coming to the bed-rock, and occasionally sell their rights. The party who purchase, however, after having sunk one or two feet deeper, very often strike on a rich deposit of gold. The gold differs very much in its size and form, and one hears of 'fine,' or 'gold-dust,' 'scaly,' and 'rough,' according to the character of the country in which it is found. The fine, or gold-dust, is found in granite country, where there are no quartz rocks; the 'scaly,' where quartz and slate are intermixed; and the 'rough,' where quartz predominates. When the gold has the appearance of being much water-worn, and thinly diffused, it is called 'drift gold;' and it is understood that there is some deposit, or bed of gold, from which it has come. To alight upon these deposits is the great object of

research and attention on the part of gold-diggers. A man, or a party, might do, as I used to see one man do—old Bill Cowpers (whom I knew as a bullock-driver, before the diggings were heard of)—dig away at the side of a mountain and ‘chance it.’ Very few of the diggers, however, would chance it as Bill did; he never seemed to move from the place where he first commenced. Perhaps it was very inconvenient for him to shift, as he had an aboriginal woman living with him, which might be a potent reason for his always remaining at one place. Bill had evidently great faith in the mountain. Six months might elapse, and with all his labour he would not get any gold apparently; he never seemed in any way desirous, however, continued always dig, digging in the side of the mountain, and washing, with the assistance of the aboriginal woman, the gravel and clay which he collected as carefully as if he had been getting gold all the time. A lad who assisted him on one occasion, when he came upon a rich spot, said, however, that he had got six hundred pound’s worth, and that it would keep him and his ‘gin’ a long time. Bill had been about twelve years beside his hole in the mountain, when I saw him last, and he is likely to die there.

Parts of country may be met with which are entirely covered with quartz; ridges, hills, mountains, and valleys, where the grass is short, or has been recently burnt, glistening in the sun, as if covered with snow. Where there is quartz, however, there is

not necessarily gold, and no universal rule of any kind would seem to be applicable for enabling one to find the eagerly-sought-for metal. Strong indications of its presence may be found, however, in one place more than another, from the quartz having the appearance of being much burnt; and also from the presence of rounded pebbles, calcined stones, black sand, or emery patches—garnets, sapphires, etc., lying on the surface. There is a sign held out in such cases to dig, but one might dig a long time without finding more than a few specks in a tin dishful of earth or gravel; he might be fortunate, too, however, as I saw one man who had come upon a nugget as large as a child's fist, about a foot beneath the surface of the ground. News of this kind spreads fast. There had been a few instances of the same kind; hundreds and thousands of people were soon attracted to the spot; a Gold Commissioner, with his staff of officials, arrived, and claims were taken up. It was no better, however, than a lottery; for one who was successful there were twenty unsuccessful, whilst the majority of the people went away poorer than they came. They might have been more successful, and the new gold-field 'gone ahead,' had water been more plentiful. Without water, however, even a gold-field, however rich, would seem to be almost valueless.

Quartz is said to be the matrix of gold, and auriferous quartz is very often spoken of as the kind of quartz in which the gold has been formed, and

still exists in its disintegrated state. This quartz is sometimes discovered in the sides of mountains, cropping out from beneath the surface, and the gold is seen embedded in streaks and veins, in the most minute particles, often just large enough to be seen by the naked eye. 'Fosacking' is the term given to the employment of those who go about searching for gold thus exposed on the surface of the ground, and the tools of those persons consist merely of a pocket-knife and a hammer. There is never much hope entertained of the success of those who go a-fosacking, however, and there are very few who think of it.

When a discovery of this kind has been made—gold in the solid rock—which is termed 'quartz reefs,' a company is immediately started for working it. Steam power and gear are necessary for crushing the quartz, and a great amount of capital is required for working the reefs to advantage. Skill is often as much needed as capital, however, and indeed, success depends altogether upon proper management. Experience often comes too late for correcting mistakes which have been made. Besides quicksilver and blankets, there are various appliances used to prevent the escape of the most minute particle of gold from the crushed quartz in the process of washing. Companies are not much heard of at the gold-fields, however, save in connection with quartz-crushing. There are gold-fields in which there are no quartz rocks, and where very little quartz may be seen, though small pieces of gold are

always found amongst the sand and gravel. The country on the surface is interspersed with large bluffs and boulders of granite ; the gold, in such cases, is very fine, and is very properly called 'gold-dust,' being almost as fine as flour, whilst one rarely sees particles as large as the smallest pin-head. There is always the greatest abundance of garnets and emery in the bottom of the cradle or trough in which the gold is washed, and specimens may be found of all the precious stones, cairngorm, cornelian, agate, sapphire, emerald, ruby, topaz, and many others; and it would be unjust to the writer—himself the bearer of the first prospect of gold found in the northern diggings to Sydney—to omit mention of the diamond. A jeweller there, to whom I shewed the prospect, pointed to a diamond among the small stones which were mixed with the gold. I mentioned the circumstance to several diggers ; but they all seemed to think more of gold than of diamonds. There are also many interesting objects of natural science to be seen in the washing-stuff of the gold-digger, not the least of which, perhaps, are many varieties of petrified wood.

Steam power is used for other purposes besides quartz-crushing. A gentleman invited me on one occasion to look at his steam-engine, which he had employed in pumping water out of a large hole in a creek beside a gold-field. He had thirty men engaged, at the rate of ten shillings per day, in shovelling the mud, sand, and gravel at the bottom of the hole, as the water was pumped out, into carts and wheelbarrows. A

great amount of ingenuity was displayed in making use of the water pumped out, in washing the stuff that was taken from the bottom of the hole. The yellow grains of gold, when they were washed and sank to the bottom; seemed to stream at one small opening of the trough as plentifully and as regularly as flour from the spout of a mill. The person alluded to had netted twelve thousand pounds from the one water-hole. What one water-hole had done, what might not another do? so dictated reason; but there is neither reason nor common sense sometimes in connection with the finding of gold. He persevered, and persevered again, until he had lost all his former earnings. This tale is so common that the words, 'gain to-day and lose to-morrow,' have almost passed into a proverb. Perseverance at gold-digging, of all known pursuits in the world, is the least likely to be attended with success.

During the *furor* in England, produced by the intelligence of gold-fields having been discovered in Australia, several Gold Mining Companies were started in London, with the usual announcements of 'Provisional Committee,' 'Interim Secretary,' etc. Shares were sold and resold, but what ultimately became of some of the companies it might be difficult to conjecture. There was one, however, which should not have blown up so readily as it did. No doubt, in this case, it was very disheartening, after a very large expenditure of money in the designing, purchase, and exportation of machinery, and the payment of the passage-money of a large number of men, who

were engaged as servants of the company, to hear that the machinery was of no use, after great expense in dragging it a long way into the interior; and that the most of the hired servants had deserted as soon as they had reached the shores of Australia. A number of the men adhered to their engagements, however, whilst a more trustworthy manager of the company could not have been found anywhere than the one who had been engaged. The position in which this gentleman found himself placed was not very enviable—at least, he said so himself; as he could get no tidings whatever of his employers. The company had broken up, and no one would have anything to do with him. He accommodated himself to the situation, however—set to work with the men who had remained, to find gold as others were finding it. Success attended his efforts; and at last he found himself in possession of a large quantity of gold. Not at all relishing his somewhat questionable situation, he decided on freeing himself from the concern—paid the men their wages, and the debts he had incurred for the company. He kept the remaining portion of gold and returned to England. It may be interesting to the ‘Provisional Committee’ and ‘Interim Secretary,’ to know that their machinery is still in good order, and, when I saw it last, was still the cause of many curious inquiries from passers-by, and the subject of endless conjectures as to its object.

It is not usual with the diggers, when they have amassed a quantity of gold—made what they designate

a 'pile'—to keep it in their possession at the gold-fields; though small quantities may be freely parted with, and sold to bank-agents, storekeepers, and others. They have all a correct knowledge of the value of the precious metal, and have scales for weighing it in their tents. The 'Government gold escort,' a four-wheeled vehicle, drawn by four horses, in which are seated armed policemen, is intrusted with the conveyance of the gold to the capital. The Gold Commissioner at the gold-fields receives the packages (bags made of chamois leather) from the diggers, bank-agents, and others, for which he gives a duplicate or acknowledgment; and the packages, after being duly sealed and registered, are forwarded by the Government escort, as addressed, to the mint, bank, merchants, or friends of the sender.

It is understood that the mint gives the same weight in sovereigns as the weight in gold, the alloy in the sovereigns defraying the expense of coinage, and supplying the difference in value of the coined and uncoined gold. The Government always endeavours to reimburse itself for expenses connected with the gold-fields, and the subject of revenue is considered in the shape of a small export duty on the gold. A 'miner's right' of ten shillings a year, and an escort fee, however, are charges that have not much place in the mind, especially of the lucky digger.

Robberies may be heard of sometimes; but, everything considered, they are of remarkably rare occurrence. There is an overawing power in a large assemblage of

people. There are so many eyes turned from every direction upon one, like an eye of omnipresence and omniscience, that it is almost impossible for a daylight robber to escape detection; besides, the diggers are not men to be quarrelled with; not one of them would think of crying 'police,'—every one learns, in every part of Australia, and it becomes engrafted upon one's very nature by habit and experience, never to permit one'sself to be robbed, to take good care of whatever one is in possession of, and to offer no temptation to any person whatever. There is no small number of persons, however, 'loafers' and 'hangers-on,' who are no better than children, as they will take whatever they fancy, or whatever they can lay their hands on, when they find they can do so unobserved. 'Stolen waters are sweet,' and there can be no doubt of the great pleasure which they have in stealing.

When found in its native state, embedded in the earth, and mixed with the soil, gold in the hands of many of the diggers would seem to lose all its adhesive properties. Speaking generally, there is nothing with which people are usually found so loath to part with as gold. The truth of the saying, 'lightly comes, lightly goes,' will not at all apply, however, to the case of the digger, for the gold is not easily found, very great labour being required, and sometimes very great expense incurred in finding it; at least, such is the case in most of the gold-diggings. 'Pains seek to be paid in pleasures,' would seem to approach much nearer the truth, and

account for the amazing indifference manifested by many of the diggers in taking care of that of which they had so much difficulty in acquiring possession. The life of personal discomfort, the pangs of loss and disappointment, the great uncertainty with which the mind has been kept, as on a rack,—all rebound with great force on the head of the lucky digger; and success very quickly passes into, and terminates in excess. With nothing to live or hope for, with no views extending beyond the present, without any previous fixed habits of frugality, the majority of those who were the first at the diggings—wonderfully successful old convicts—throw away the money which they had obtained for their gold, as if the pleasure of throwing it away was the only motive which they had in seeking for and finding gold; and some of them might have been heard telling, as I have frequently heard them myself, in boastful language and in rivalry one with another, how fast they could throw it away, or ‘knock it down,’ as they termed it. The mind sometimes cannot endure to be kept brooding over that of which it feels its incapacity to take any care and management; whilst there is a kind of relief experienced in getting rid of that which would be a source of care and anxiety to continue in possession of. It was not till the last sixpence was gone, that some men whom I knew might be said to have returned to their normal condition, and were fit for work. There is not an inn of any description to be met with anywhere, in which champagne does not figure prominently and

invitingly, with its peculiar glasses and bottles, the name of the wine being marked in gilt, artistically-formed letters on an emblazoned label. There is a studied attention in such cases to supply a demand of not unfrequent occurrence, that of men coming to 'knock down' their money—and it is always the most expensive liquor which such men call for, namely, champagne, for which they are charged fifteen or twenty shillings per bottle; but this will not satisfy, and nothing will satisfy them but a 'shout for all hands,' every one within hearing being asked to partake. Some of them, in this state of mind, have been known to light their pipes with bank-notes—an illustration of consuming vanity and ostentation, and a manner of gratifying the love of display of wealth, which might fairly claim the merit of defying all competition.

Those who continue to lead a wandering and unsettled life, notwithstanding the most solid qualities of heart and mind, which would admirably qualify them for taking an honourable place, and attaining success in the many pursuits in the great mart of the world's industry, are apt to become so entirely changed in character as to be almost unfit for any settled occupation. Everything seems to have got out of joint with them—they are restless and dissatisfied—locomotion, like some poisonous ingredient instilled into their veins, infects their whole constitution of mind and body, and it is to very little purpose that an antidote is administered, in the shape of the advice, 'a rolling stone gathers no

moss.' There are chances waiting them yet ; they must go, will go, and would continue going until the end of the chapter of this earthly existence, were it not for the strong claims which the great law of necessity imposes upon them, and which compels them to go no longer when they are not able to go. The greatest and saddest drawback of the gold-digging life, besides the uncertainty which attends it, is the wandering and unsettled mode of existence, which seems to be almost inseparable from it. A claim may turn out very well, but it is apt to get worked out; another claim is taken up, and it may turn out a 'shicer;' then there are other gold-fields, where the diggers are reported to be doing better, or a new gold-field is discovered, and there is always the hope of being more successful, so that the life of chance, like 'a Will-of-the-wisp,' leads the unlucky digger from place to place; and it is not trifling earnings of gold which he learns to be contented with. Seven or ten shillings a day would be thought very indifferently of, and would be said to be 'nothing.'

Every one practically acquainted with the gold-fields will advise young men to be cautious before engaging in the pursuit of gold-digging, or may urge them not to think of it. It is a most perilous situation for them—a life of the direst temptation. A man may be damaged in body, heart, and mind, much in the same way as a carriage may be damaged by bad usage in being taken from the beaten, public highway, and made to jolt over ruts and rough, broken ground, the risk and

the damage to the carriage being greater when it is built of green and unseasoned timber. It is almost impossible for young men to take that amount of care of themselves at the gold-fields which is necessary for their well-being. Personal discomfort and unpalatable diet are matters of no slight consideration, as depravity of living has an affinity of attraction for every other kind of depravity. Man is an expensive being, and it will not do to treat one's self cheaply. A life of excitement, irregularity, and uncertainty, without any of the advantages of improving social intercourse, are also matters of no slight consideration. New and strange faces start up, a new scene of life is entered on, and young men of pliable natures will ever be prone to yield, succumb, and accommodatethemselves to circumstances, very bad circumstances, indeed, amid the great disturbing forces of gain, loss, and disappointment, added to the evil of working in slush, under the heat of the mid-daysun, with the constitution taxed above its native strength. Hence there is always a ready recourse to ardent spirits for quelling the mental and bodily disturbance; and the practice is apt to become habitual, as the necessities of the hour and moment tend to supersede and to extinguish all other considerations.

The Yankees, as the natives of the United States of America are familiarly called, are remarkable for their adaptation to circumstances, for fertility of resources, and for singular talent in pushing and 'going ahead.' They are enterprising traders, and all the Southern

Pacific ocean, and various shipping ports, bear evidence of their commercial industry, in the interchange of signals, and such inquiries between vessels on approaching each other on the wide ocean, as 'cargo,' 'where bound for?' Passengers on board British vessels are familiar with the names of Boston, New York, and other ports in America, and the phrase, 'American notions,' in the answer given as to the cargo. 'American notions' consist of an immense variety of articles of merchandise which the United States would seem to hold the prescriptive right of manufacture, such as cheap household, farming, and digging utensils, buggies, clocks, and many other things extensively used in the Australian colonies. Communicativeness and inquisitiveness are nearly related; they seem to be excellent auxiliaries in that industrious art, the 'pursuit of knowledge under difficulties,' and no one would seem better qualified to enlist them in his service than a Yankee trader. When gold-digging commenced in California, the writer was staying at an hotel in Wellington, New Zealand, where a Yankee trader was also staying. Seated at the dining-table, the latter was discoursing of the business he was doing very largely; and most benignantly to some other seafaring men, to whom he was occasionally putting questions. Captains of vessels are known to do a good deal of business on their own account, in addition to taking charge of their ships and cargoes, and it might be useful to hear what might concern them. There was not much to arrest

attention until the Yankee trader, with a touch of bravado, made the astounding announcement of his intention to take a *cargo of coffins*! 'Coffins! a cargo of coffins!' every one at table seemed to say, at the same time looking most demurely at the Yankee trader, as if he and his brig, the fast sailing of which he was always boasting of, were the veritable Charon and his boat! An explanation ensued. 'Coffins,' he said; 'are selling high just now in California; I took,' he continued, 'a cargo of potatoes from this to San Francisco when I was here last; they all went to smash before I got to the Sacramento. I have returned for another cargo, and I calculate, by putting them into coffins, having all the carpenters I can get here making them, I'll land the potatoes safely, and make an almighty dollar of the two!' To such an ingenious, money-making, and enterprising race of people the gold-fields of Australia could not fail to present attractions. At first, it must be confessed; they made themselves very obnoxious to the peaceably disposed portion of the people, in spouting republicanism, and exciting to rebellion against the British Government; and they all seemed to be dubbed majors, or captains, in virtue of the military rank which they held in the United States. Intermeddling with political affairs was rather a work of supererogation on their part, as there was the people's great champion and leader in Sydney espousing the cause of separation, and crying 'cut the painter!' quoting on all occasions, as he continues to

do still, American institutions as a textbook for instruction and guidance, and endeavouring to make every one believe, as he seems profoundly in the belief himself, that whatever is American is divine. The era of responsible government, and the advent of manhood suffrage, must have reconciled the Yankees to the country, however, as they were never afterwards heard of as meddling with politics. They were engaged more profitably to themselves and others, in introducing, if not inventing, various mechanical contrivances, for facilitating the labour of digging for and washing gold. There was one gold-field with a population of nearly three thousand people, all in some way or other dependent on the diggings, where everything was at a dead-lock from the want of water to wash the earth in which the gold was found; nothing daunted, a number of American citizens formed themselves into a company, and entered into arrangements with the Gold Commissioners and the Government for the privilege of selling water to the diggers. A water-course was dug, communicating with a running stream far out of reach, a 'race' (as the water-course is called) was formed, winding round and round for fourteen miles, thus supplying the much-needed water to the diggers in the different localities. The labour was immense, and the engineering skill which was displayed, especially in dams and sluices, and the formation of aqueducts over deep ravines in the mountains, was astonishing. The company, however, reimbursed themselves

largely, and derived a great revenue from the sale of water, which was charged for weekly. They ultimately sold their interest in the water in shares, and returned to the United States with, as the diggers said, a 'pile.'

There are people to be met with at the gold-fields from every country in Europe—some from the Cape of Good Hope, and some from the West Indies. There are no foreigners, however, equal to the Chinese in respect of numbers. They were coming, shipload after shipload, so rapidly that some fear was entertained of their outnumbering the British population, were they permitted to come as they had been doing. The result was the imposition of a poll-tax of ten pounds by the Legislature, which has nearly amounted to a prohibition. Singly, they appear to be quiet, good-humoured, passive, and unresisting people. A very different opinion is formed of them, however, when they are found in large numbers together, being sulky, stubborn, overbearing, having the manner of persons possessed by a sense of their great importance. They are generally disliked by the other diggers. Not being so venturesome as others, a Chinaman prefers safe, though small, earnings to making a venture, as in sinking a shaft; whilst he is given to wash over again the stuff that has been washed by others, instead of finding out new stuff for himself. There are many of them at the diggings and townships engaged in business as storekeepers, bakers, butchers,

and market gardeners. Marriages sometimes take place between them and English, Scottish, and Irish females. They are notorious gamblers and great cheats. A storekeeper related to me a clever artifice which some of them had resorted to for cheating him and many others. He had been putting sovereigns into his pocket, along with his silver change, but he could never see them to take them out again when he wanted them. This went on for some time, as he thought that the confusion of mind which he might have been in was the cause of the disappearance of the sovereigns. Having observed, however, that Chinamen were rather anxious to get change in silver, and were somewhat fastidious when they got it, his suspicions were aroused—and he found, on looking at the silver in his pockets, that the half-crowns, shillings, and sixpences were coated with quicksilver! The mystery of the disappearance of the sovereigns was at once solved. They had received a coating of quicksilver from mixing with the Chinamen's silver, and he had given away his sovereigns to them in change as shillings! When first introduced, and before the gold-diggings commenced, the Chinese had not perhaps the opportunity of cheating, being engaged under periods of indenture at very small wages, about six pounds a year, as shepherds, cooks, and servants making themselves generally useful. They were always known, however, to be engaged in cheating one another. The superintendent of a station, where I halted for the night, shewed me a piece of paper with some scrawls of

ink upon it, which, he said, he had just received from a Chinaman in payment for five pounds' worth of store-goods. The Chinaman looked most woeful and confused when told that it was not worth anything. Another Chinaman, he said, had given it to him in payment for a horse, and said it was Englishman's money for five pounds; an imposition of the same kind as that which an Englishman in China might practise upon another in attempting to write the Chinese language, and in giving him a document purporting to be Chinese.

When the gold-diggings commenced, shepherds were not receiving more than twelve pounds, and stockmen seventeen pounds a year; whilst labour generally was very cheap, and all the labouring classes, who could afford to pay the passage-money, were going to California. It was at this time that the Chinese were first introduced to supply the great demand for labour. Wages rose instantly on gold being found in Australia, and the labouring classes were largely benefited. When the gold was first discovered, people went with a determination to find it; hoping even against hope; but they are not so much disposed now to 'chance it.' Rich and payable spots are not, therefore, so apt to be come upon, and this may account for the reported falling-off in the yield of the gold-fields. As to the gold-fields becoming worked out, exhaustion may occur in some places, that is, the gold may be found so thinly diffused as not to pay the labour of finding it, but there are so many large tracts of country of a similar

character to that in which it is found, that new gold-fields will always be heard of, and gold-digging is likely to continue to take its place as a permanent and great industrial pursuit. Were the diggers to content themselves with small, though certain, earnings, and not go about so much from place to place, it might be better for them, and complaints of the want of success would be more seldom heard of. The truth of the aphorism, 'Gold may be bought too dear,' has a singular confirmation at the very fountain-head. The statement is so current at the gold-fields, and has appeared so often in print—indeed, I have seen it in some of the Melbourne newspapers—that there must be some foundation for the truth of the assertion, that every ounce of gold obtained from the earth is produced at a cost of seven pounds. As much as ten pounds per ounce has sometimes been reckoned as the cost of its production. This is astounding. The selling price of gold amounts only to about three pounds seventeen shillings and sixpence per ounce. Three pounds twelve shillings, and three pounds fifteen shillings, are about the prices received by the diggers, according to quality. It is not, therefore, the gold-diggers, but the traders, storekeepers, innkeepers, merchants, and people in England, with the farmers in California and Chili, who have benefited most by the gold-fields in Australia. Large benefits have also, no doubt, been derived by stock-holders—sheep and cattle having quadrupled in price. Sinking a shaft is an

expensive and laborious undertaking; from the bad state of the roads in a time of flood, and the impossibility of travelling in a time of drought, provisions are apt to become scarce, and flour, sugar, tea, and all other commodities, rise to such exorbitant prices that very large earnings indeed are necessary to enable one to stand the contest; besides, a scarcity of water may occur, and this adds immensely to the expense. The number of persons of different grades of life with whom I have met, who had been engaged in gold-digging, had met with indifferent success, and had tired and sickened of the occupation, is a good opinion on the spot as to the unsatisfactory nature of a life of gold-digging.

CHAPTER VI.

SHEPHERDING.

THE SHEPHERDS' MODE OF LIFE—EASY WAY OF EARNING
A LIVELIHOOD—HUTKEEPERS AND FAMILIES—RE-
SOURCES FOR THOSE UNACCUSTOMED TO MANUAL
LABOUR—WAGES—RATIONS—A COMMERCIAL TRAVELLER
AND AN EXPATRIATED IRISH LANDLORD—SHEPHERDING
A STEPPING-STONE TO A BETTER POSITION—A LUCKY
IRISHMAN—NEWLY-ARRIVED EMIGRANTS—SCOTTISH
HIGHLANDERS IN TROUBLE—ENCAMPING OUT.

A MAN walking slowly along a public highway, with a flock of sheep straggling before him, and nibbling at the grass on the roadside, is not unlike the shepherding of Australia. Indeed, any one capable of walking a few miles a day, with sufficient eyesight to observe the sheep before him, as he leisurely follows them, is deemed quite competent to perform the duties of a shepherd. It is not so in New Zealand, however, shepherding there more nearly resembling what it is in Great Britain; whilst a man who might suit for a shepherd in Australia might not suit in New Zealand. There are few things which seem so surprising as the facility with which a livelihood may

be secured in Australia, without doing anything worthy of the name of labour—simply by shepherding. Many persons, who in the mother country would most unquestionably be the inmates of poor-houses, or the objects of public charity, can always manage to obtain here, by tending sheep, a comfortable subsistence for themselves and families, and even accumulate money if they are careful. It was an excellent method of getting rid of some noisome people who had been always crying out for relief, to send them to Australia; and it must have been very astonishing to many to think how it was possible for such helpless human beings, when they arrived there, to be able to provide for themselves. There were two persons among them, a man and his wife, both far advanced in years. The woman had lost the power of her limbs; but when stretched on a couch beside the fire, she was able to cook for herself and her husband. The man could not do much—but he could do a little; he could walk about a mile a day, and attend to some maimed sheep (foot-rot), resting himself the most of the time on a fallen tree; and this service entitled him to eight shillings a week, with rations for himself and wife.

Shepherding is a very indolent occupation, and it is pitiable in the extreme sometimes to see a man of fourteen or sixteen stones weight dragging himself along the ground, sitting on a fallen tree, lying down, basking in the sun, and doing work which might be done as well—and which is very frequently done—by a boy

fourteen or sixteen years of age. Hutkeeping is a still lazier occupation. The man has nothing to do save to sit in the hut all day long, to cook his own victuals, to shift, when necessary, the hurdles in which the sheep are folded, and to inform the overseer of any of the sheep being amissing when the flocks are put in at night. He sleeps in a covered box like a sedan-chair beside the sheep, to guard against any attack being made upon them by the native dogs, the noise and howlings of his own dog, the usual signal of their presence, awakening him. When a family is engaged for an out-station, there is an addition of wages in lieu of the hutkeeper; the wife taking care of the hut, the husband making himself responsible for performing all the other duties of the hutkeeper. There are usually two or three shepherds at an out-station, and the sleeping by the sheep-folds at night is always arranged in such a way that one of the unmarried shepherds may do it. When the married and unmarried all live comfortably together, the out-station—the usual haggard, naked, woe-begone looking shepherd's hut—is found very frequently, in such cases, to assume the appearance of a comfortable homestead. The wife, if a thrifty woman, employs her powers of persuasion with the men in assisting her to carry out her schemes of domestic management and economy; cows are kept, a garden is formed, and there are all the usual adjuncts of household comfort. The employ-

ing of families at stations is a great improvement upon the old system of hutkeepers; a home is provided for many a previously homeless wanderer, the humanizing influences of society are brought within their reach, and they are saved from the great danger of becoming what is called 'cranky'—a deficiency in their mental powers, which has happened to some from being long alone. When there are in a family one or two boys capable of taking charge of a flock of sheep, the family is left in sole charge of the out-station; and the general arrangement is, when there are two boys shepherding, that the father of the family stays at home, employing his time to his own and his family's benefit, in such work as cultivating the garden, making shoes—if he is a shoemaker—and attending, at the same time, to the boys in charge of the sheep, and seeing that they do their duty properly.

One of the singular attractions which Australia presents, is the asylum which it provides for persons who are incapable of doing manual labour, and the ease with which a livelihood may be gained, and the bread of industry won, independently of hard labour. Those who are unable to face the storm and endure the stern realities of life in individual effort and encounter with the world, may here, in shepherding, always betake themselves as to a shelter, possessing and enjoying the peace and comfort of a home, and be plentifully provided for. Many persons in Australia, more especially those who are the heads of families, who have never been accus-

tomed to manual labour, are subject to a pressure that falls easily and lightly enough upon those inured to toil, but is a most grievous burden when borne by those who have never earned their bread by the sweat of their brow. A knowledge of the land they live in, and its great pursuit, 'wool-growing,' would, however, enable them to place themselves in a position in which they would be able to attain independence, and all the while receive the advantages of a settled home. A person whom I knew, who had been a commercial traveller in England, preferring a shepherd's life, had quietly and comfortably ensconced himself at an out-station with his wife and family, wholly free from expense. He appeared quite satisfied, and there was no word of grumbling, discontent, or disappointment to be heard from his lips; the cause being, I suppose, that he was well-informed, knew the kind of country which he had come to, and had been careful not to leave himself any ground for complaint or disappointment. His gay partner, with whom he had braved the 'perils of the deep,' to push his fortune in Australia, proved herself to be an industrious housewife; a well-cultivated garden, with cows, pigs, and poultry, testified to their industry and domestic comfort, whilst the flowers in front of their dwelling showed the lively interest which they had taken in their new situation. The commercial traveller, now a shepherd, was ambitious to 'get on,' was qualifying himself for an overseership, and hoped, he said, to be 'promoted from the ranks.' He

was fond of reading, and he had certainly every facility, so far as regarded time, for indulging in his hobby. Whatever may have been the benefits generally of Sir Robert Peel's Encumbered Irish Estates Bill, it had brought about a great change in the fortunes of one person whom I knew, who said to me, that being at an out-station in the bush of Australia was somewhat different from living in state and being lord of the manor of one of the finest properties on the banks of the ——. However, he did not seem in any way discontented—was, in fact, with his excellent wife and family, very happy and cheerful. Virtue seeks the shade, and there were many circumstances which concurred to render his situation agreeable. Their privacy was not liable to be intruded upon; they were all enabled to maintain their independence, and there was no hard work required of them; the sons had received a superior education, and there was every prospect of their future advancement as overseers or superintendents. Their house was situated on the slope of a ridge which ran along the banks of a river, and out of reach of high-water mark. In the course of the channel of the river there were patches of alluvial soil. One of these patches, not far distant, had been taken possession of and cultivated by the previous occupant of the station. Maize was grown in sufficient quantities to feed pigs and poultry, whilst the ground was strewn with pumpkins and melons. There was also a handsome addition of garden produce, in the shape of a

superabundance of peaches; and if the man who had planted the peach stones had also planted grape and fig cuttings, there would have been a still more valuable addition. As it was, it was merely an accident that there were fruit-trees there at all, and the man at the time of planting them very likely thought little of the favour he was conferring on those who were to come after him. They could have received the use of as many cows as they pleased—hundreds of them, in fact—as stockholders are too glad to get their cattle quartered to refuse any request for them.

There are a great many unpleasant associations connected with Australian shepherding, however; at first there were convicts, next exiles, then followed Chinese, with half-castes, and coolies from India; even savages from the Fejee Islands were introduced to help the sheep-farmers. Cheap labour was wanted, and the profits of grazing at the time could not afford, or were supposed not to afford, a sufficiently high rate of wages to attract emigrants from Great Britain. All this has passed away, however. The gold-diggings brought about a complete revolution in the rates of wages—those of shepherds rose from twelve to forty pounds a year, and even as high as sixty pounds, when a man undertook the watching of his flock at night, whilst rations were added. The rations for one man are the well-known weekly allowance of 10 lbs. of flour, 10 lbs. of meat, 2 lbs. of sugar, and a quarter of a pound of tea. The wages of shepherds, like those of

every other description of labour, will be found, however, to vary at different periods, and in different parts of the country, in accordance with the law of supply and demand.

There is much interest attached to the occupation of shepherding, from the large number of people who are engaged in it, from the peculiar situation of individuals and families, and also from its having been hitherto the great starting point—the stepping-stone, or the spring-board—for enabling people to make money for their future settlement in life. The population of towns—storekeepers, innkeepers, and others engaged in business—is recruited from the shepherding class; farming is almost entirely in their hands; whilst many, with esquires added to their names, who may be seen driving in their chariots, with horses in bright burnished silver-mounted harness, commenced their Australian life as shepherds. Those who take to the occupation are saved all risk of loss, to begin with—having nothing to lose; taken from on board ship, it may be, when landed, they are provided for, housed, fed, and attended to like children in the arms of their nurse; whilst they acquire knowledge of the country, of pursuits, manners, and customs; thus the stability of their fortune is not endangered in the same way as that of one who first begins to settle on the land devoid of experience, and who has to maintain himself and family all the while at his own cost.

Those who would seem to profit most in shepherding are families in which there are one, two, or three boys, each capable of tending a flock of sheep. A father of a family, thus favourably circumstanced, incidentally mentioned to me in his house, that he had saved by his sons' labour one thousand pounds, and that he proposed to remove from the bush, and settle in New Zealand. It is far from being desirable that any one individual, or family, should continue long shepherding, however; from the solitary mode of life, 'all, all alone,' Sunday and Saturday, from one year's end to the other, constantly following sheep, an instinctive aversion to the occupation is soon felt, and there are many, in consequence, who leave to settle in a town or neighbourhood, leaving their places to be filled by others. An Irishman, named Michael O'Brady, whose hut I used to pass very frequently, and to whose wife, Bridget, I was indebted for many kindnesses, in receiving part of their rations, was the only one I have met who seemed quite determined to stick to shepherding as long as he could. Michael did not herd himself, however, and was always hanging about the house; he had a large number of boys shepherding, and they were bringing him, he said, three hundred pounds a year. Michael seemed to have been made for Australia, or Australia for him, and no two ever got on better together. 'I don't like work,' he once said to the writer, who had questioned him if he never thought of buying land and settling near a town. Michael arrived at the time when shep-

herds were leaving to go to the California gold-diggings, and was, therefore, a great prize. He was taken from the ship in which he landed, with Bridget and their crowd of young children, and conveyed in a dray, to a station far in the interior, by the sheep-farmer who hired him and his eldest boy. This is not always the good fortune of many, however, and newly arrived emigrants are not unfrequently thrown into a state of great perplexity in not seeing employers waiting, as they anticipated, to engage them. The statements of some of those emigrants would appear pitiable in the extreme to those unacquainted with their real situation and the manners of the country. A paragraph, under the heading 'Distressing Case,' appeared in a Queensland newspaper, but an old colonist, or one inured to Australian life, would have failed to see anything distressing in the case. Two families, the paragraph stated, had arrived in an emigrant ship. The fathers of those families, two stout, able-bodied men, had travelled forty miles inland, looking for employment, and could not find any. They returned to Brisbane and made their case known to the authorities, stating that they and their families were destitute. An old colonist, however, would at once have 'humphed his swag,' and taken his family with him; he would not think a journey of forty miles worth speaking about, as the further he travelled inland, the more certain he would be of obtaining employment, and a high rate of wages; whilst he would persevere in going

from station to station, until he had succeeded in finding a situation of some kind or other.

The people are all very kind; and the poorer the families, the more certain one would seem to be of being hospitably entertained; whilst the owners of stations are always remarkable for assisting persons who are looking for employment. I knew of only one case of travellers complaining of want of hospitality. The complaint was made by a number of Scottish Highlanders, who had not been long from on board ship, and were wending their way to a station in the interior. They stopped me suddenly on the road, and one exclaimed, partly in English and partly in Gaelic, with a movement of his arm which the appetite of hunger seemed only capable of causing, 'If we had met you,' (meaning, also, all the other people in the bush) 'as you have met us, in the Glen of ———, we would have shown you how to treat men.' An explanation followed, when it appeared that they had been a long time without food, and had been refused assistance at a station which they had just passed. They had failed to make their case clearly known, and they were ignorant of the fact that the district which they were traversing was overrun with gold-diggers, whose repeated calls at the houses of the settlers was too great a tax to be borne patiently. The wants of the Highlanders were supplied, however, by a most hospitable gentleman, at the next station which they came to.

Encamping out at night is a universal practice.

Indeed, an experienced Australian never dreams in travelling of making to a house for lodgings, unless it be to recruit his stock of provisions. There are always drays going along the road, and travellers on foot usually keep company with the draymen in their favourite places of encampment, and it is always found to be more agreeable to sleep out at night, under an awning, such as that of a blanket, or a covering formed of a sheet of calico.

CHAPTER VII.

LOST IN THE BUSH.

BUSH DIRECTIONS TO TRAVELLERS—BUSH OF AUSTRALIA AND
BUSH OF NEW ZEALAND—DIED OF STARVATION—
RIDING IN A CIRCLE—LOST TRAVELLERS—A TRAVELLER
GONE MAD—SHORT CUTS AND HAIRBREADTH ESCAPES—
MARKED TREE LINE—LOST CHILDREN—BLACKS TRACK-
ING A LOST CHILD—A MOTHER AND HER LOST CHILD
—ABORIGINAL GUIDES.

THE directions which are usually given to a traveller who is endeavouring to find his way from one station to another in the interior, where there is no 'marked tree line,' or bush track, to guide him, are much as follows: 'Keep down the side of the river (or creek) for nearly three miles, until you come to a cattle camp; pass that and bear a little to the right, and you will come to Rocky Gully; cross over it, and look for a ridge to the left; go over it, and keep right ahead, and you will come to Oakey Creek; follow it down, and you will come to an out station of Ballibullu. There is a well-marked road from that to the head-station. You cannot mistake it—it is only twenty miles.' An experienced bushman would not be likely to mistake

such directions. He would know how much a mile represented, he would know a cattle camp when he saw it, and he could also distinguish Rocky Gully and Oakey Creek from all other creeks and gullies, as being prominent features in the country to be travelled over; places, such as creeks and gullies, being often named from some peculiarity that distinguishes them, such as the existence of water. It is very different, however, with one who is unaccustomed to bush travelling; if he ~~sees~~ one cattle camp he sees a hundred: and as to Rocky Gully and Oakey Creek, they cannot speak for themselves and say that they are the gullies and creeks which were to be come to. Over-anxiety is always certain to lead to a mistake, and the directions which have been given should be carefully attended to. A gentleman in travelling informed me that he had gone one hundred miles out of his way, in consequence of a mistake which he had committed in not following the direction indicated in words similar to those given above. He had turned off too soon—went right ahead as directed, continued his journey until he came to what he supposed was Oakey Creek, followed it down, and came to a part of the country far from where he had intended going to, when he discovered that, instead of following the fall of the water to the west, he had followed it to the east. The whole country has the appearance of being spread over with a net-work, in consequence of the chains of hills and mountains which are thinly covered with trees. Hills bare of trees being rarely met with, it is impossible to see

to any great distance in one direction, and thus mark out some object to steer one's course by; and, as a consequence, travelling in a straight direction is seldom possible, from the intervening and frequently steep mountains, unless it may be far inland, where the country is much more level. The bush of Australia bears no resemblance to the bush of New Zealand, that of the latter country being dense, indeed, frequently impenetrable forest, not unlike the clumps of plantation which occur at intervals in the mountain districts of Scotland.

A gentleman, who had recently arrived from England, named St. George, with whom I sometimes met whilst travelling, had brought with him ten thousand pounds to invest in sheep-farming. Favoured with letters of introduction, he was profitably employing his time in going from station to station, endeavouring to acquire information and make himself acquainted with the modes of management of sheep, before completing a purchase. He trusted himself, on one occasion, to follow out a bush direction given to him, from one station to another, (the distance was about twenty miles across the country); there was no marked tree line, or bush track, and he was requested to be very careful to look out, after he had crossed a chain of mountains, for a bridle-track which would lead him straight to the station which he wished to go to. The bridle-track was of vital importance to him, and he felt as if his very life depended upon it. He took the first track he came to, after he had crossed the mountains, and followed it all day, up and

down hill, over fallen trees, branches, rocks, stones, and sometimes through close scrub; still the path was very distinctly marked. The sun shone sometimes on his back, sometimes on his face, and he did not know what to think of it; he always kept on the path, however, as directed, where he could see it, but the path, or supposed bridle-track, never seemed to bring him nearer the anxiously-looked-for station. Darkness finally set in, and, as he could not see his way any further, there was no alternative left but to remain in the bush all night. He was frightened to trust his horse by allowing it to graze freely, as experienced bushmen always do, by taking off the saddle and bridle, and making use of the stirrup leathers to tie the horse's fore feet to prevent it from straying any distance. He never let the reins out of his hands, greatly to his own as well as his horse's discomfort. The next day's journey was much the same as the preceding one—up and down hill, over rocks, dead timber, and through brushwood, still, after all his arduous labours and indefatigable perseverance, there was not the least appearance of being rewarded by a sight of a human dwelling. Faint from want of food, though fortunately there was plenty of water, and his mind not being in a very collected state, he gave himself up for lost, and with the object of removing all anxiety from the minds of his relatives in England, and showing that he had not come to his death by foul means, he wrote with a pencil on a slip of paper, 'Died of starvation,' and pinned the paper to a shirt, which he hung

on a branch of a tree. He then laid himself down on the ground, bidding farewell to the world. The shirt, however, was the cause of his being saved from the death which he had anticipated, and to which he had so complacently resigned himself, as it attracted next day the notice of a stockman who had most opportunely happened to come in that direction, and who conducted the traveller safely to the station which he had been endeavouring to reach. It transpired that Mr. St. George had been following cattle-tracks, and these are usually much more distinct and beaten than bridle-tracks. Cattle have often to travel long distances for water, and they follow one another in one path, in going to the summits of the hills and mountains for warmth at night, or in returning to the valleys to drink; and, from going to and fro so frequently, their tracks become more beaten than the public highway.

The superintendent of a station narrated to me rather a curious misadventure of a traveller, who had just made his entrance into the bush, and who was as ignorant as Mr. St. George of the necessity of adhering to the famous direction for providing against the danger of being lost: 'Follow the fall of water down; sure to come to some place.' The inexperienced traveller had lost sight of the great public highway; a fall of rain had made the grass to grow so quickly as to have made it rather difficult in some places to see the road; he gallantly persevered on his journey, however, following, as he supposed, the right direction. The attention

of the superintendent was called to him in the early part of the day, and, as he was travelling where there was no highway, the former naturally enough concluded that he was well acquainted with the country; and, from the fact of his always riding in the same place, it was thought that he was looking for lost horses or bullocks. Late in the evening, the superintendent's attention was again called to him, and, seeing that he always followed the same route, was riding at great speed, and, as nearly as he could guess, travelling in a circle, he began to entertain misgivings as to the traveller's soundness of mind. Riding up to him, the mystery was at once solved. 'I was lost! I was lost!' exclaimed the traveller, in an ecstasy of delight, 'but I knew that I was coming to some place, the road always getting more distinct.' The traveller had been making the road himself; he had come upon his own horse's tracks, had continued to follow them, and had been riding round and round as in a circus. To men placed under similar circumstances, the mark of a hatchet upon a tree, or a footprint upon the sand, will sometimes communicate far greater happiness and purer feelings of delight than those which could be communicated by entering into possession of the richest earthly inheritance.

There is always a strong temptation to 'strike across the country,' to use the common expression, as a saving may thus be effected sometimes of twenty or fifty miles in a journey of two or three days. It is in attempting

to make those 'short cuts,' as they are called, that nearly all the cases of being lost occur, and from which the numerous recitals of hair-breadth escapes derive their origin. Some of these hair-breadth escapes are certainly very remarkable. A stockman told me that, on cracking his whip in an unfrequented part of his run, he heard, as he thought, the sound of a human voice. On going to the place whence the sound proceeded, there was a man, in a most exhausted state, who had been lost for several days. Whilst making a near cut, which saved me fifteen miles in a day's journey, a shepherd, in charge of a flock of sheep, thus accosted me in passing: 'A man had a narrow escape here a few days ago; it is easy enough getting in here, but it is another thing getting out.' It was a labyrinth of granite hills, surrounded by high mountains. 'I saw the mark of a man's foot,' continued the shepherd, 'and knew that there was some one about here who had lost himself—there were fresh marks the following day. I cried and *cooeyed* without getting any answer. I brought my gun with me the next day, to make him hear. I heard his voice, and went to the place; the man was nearly dead, and I had some difficulty in getting him to my hut.' It was very thoughtful on the part of the shepherd, and creditable to him in the highest degree, as very few indeed would have taken the precaution which he took in anticipating the misfortunes of a fellow creature, and rescuing him from the jaws of death. This case contrasts most strongly with

one which I heard of in New Zealand. A number of men who were travelling together—all new arrivals—had encamped for the night. During the night long, they heard and were disturbed with the sound of the well-known *cooey*. They gave no answer, however. The *cooey* was from another party, who had been lost for several days in the dense forest, and who, some time afterwards, were found dead from exposure and hunger at the place where they had cried out. Not to answer a *cooey*—that is, *cooeing* in return—is always accounted the greatest barbarity which one can be guilty of, but it was, no doubt, excusable in this instance, the new arrivals being ignorant of its grave and important meaning.

The boldness, or rather the foolhardiness, of some in attempting to do what they see others doing, without possessing the same knowledge of the country and experience in travelling, frequently brings them into situations of great peril, and in one instance which came under my observation, was the cause of one man's death. I had traversed the same path—a bridle-track—frequently. It had been a 'marked tree line' of road, but the marks upon the trees were nearly all obliterated, and the route was only traversed by those who knew the country. The man, whom I had seen, attempted to follow this path, to 'short cut' it, and had lost himself. He was found, by the merest accident, by the owner of the station, after he had been wandering about for eight days in a maze of broken

ridges, rather thickly timbered. He had lost the use of his reason, and, in a state of delirium, had stripped himself of all his clothing and was appeasing his hunger by devouring a black snake which he had succeeded in killing, and which he still held in his hand when he was found. The gentleman who found him conveyed him in a cart to his house. Medical assistance was procured, and every attention bestowed upon him, but he never rallied, and died a few days afterwards.

There is something peculiarly distressing and lamentable, however, when children, so helpless and entirely destitute of resources, are lost. Fortunately, instances are not numerous, but, when a case does occur of a child being lost, it is a source of bitter and poignant grief to the parents, who are almost more deserving of pity than the lost child, as an occurrence of the kind never takes place without the parents taking the blame of negligence on themselves for having permitted the child to go out of their sight. I officiated at the interment of one child which came to its death in this manner. The grief of the mother was too agonizing to admit of description, and it must have been greatly intensified from the fact of the remains having been found only a very short distance from the house.

Those in search of lost children are apt, very stupidly, to make so much noise in crying and shouting, that the child is frightened, and instinctively conceals itself. A very good illustration of this came under my notice at a station where I happened to be at a time

when the child of a shepherd was lost. As soon as the intelligence reached the station, every man and boy about the place were instantly on horseback, with stock-whips in their hands, and a kennel of dogs at the horses' heels, howling and barking. A stranger would have been very apt to have mistaken all the ado and excitement as an expedition in pursuit of a bushranger, or a wild beast, rather than a search for a lost child. Scattering themselves over the ground, surrounding the shepherd's hut, they commenced looking everywhere for the child. It was rather open country, thinly dotted with trees, and they could see long distances in every direction. They were all filled with astonishment at their lack of success, and could not help giving utterance to their fears—to thoughts of the death and inscrutable mystery of the child's disappearance. It was now late in the evening; and, as they could not see to continue their search longer, they thought that they might as well kill a native dog, which their own dogs had been barking at, in a hollow log. Dismounting, and arming themselves with sticks to strike the brute as it came out, one of the men, looking into the hollow of the log, saw the child which they had been searching for. The child had been frightened by the wild screams, roars, and cries, and had hid herself.

A family may live sometimes quite unconscious of the dangers which they have been creating and rearing around their dwellings. Houses are usually at first erected where there is a clear, open sward of grass,

where large views may be obtained around, and always where there is a permanent supply of water. Where cows are kept, and dairying is carried on, the soil is enriched; and young trees are apt to grow up vigorously and to form a scrub. A girl, fourteen years of age, the daughter of most industrious parents, had gone to look for the cows in one of these scrubs, but she never returned. Ten days were fruitlessly spent in search of her by many persons; the air resounded far and near with cries to her; there was no answer, and those cries, especially by strange voices, had, in all probability, frightened her and caused her to go further away. The country was rather hilly and thinly covered with trees, as the country generally is. It was woeful to give over the search when the shades of evening had closed around them and to repair to their own houses, knowing that she whom they had been in search of was out in the cold, dewy nights, without shelter or covering, famishing for want of food; and every morsel which they put to their lips served only to remind them, and the parents more particularly, that Jessie, the lost one, had not taken anything for so many nights and days. There did not happen to be any blacks about, but their services were now deemed indispensable. There were some at a neighbouring station, who came very readily when solicited to give assistance, but it was too late. They, however, did their part very well. On being told where the girl was last seen to enter the scrub, they went down instantly on their hands and

knees, and, with their large, sooty eyes, scanned every blade of grass, fallen leaf, and twig, with as much care and delicacy as if they had been objects of infinite worth. Holding their eyes intently on the ground, and scanning it in this way as they went along, they tracked the marks of her feet, step after step, and over every inch which she had traversed. It was tedious work for the blacks, but they seemed proud of the great consideration in which their services were held. The marks of her feet led to a rocky eminence, nearly two miles distant from the house; here the blacks directed the attention of the anxious parents and others, who were watching them with absorbing interest, to some marks of blood on the rock, saying, in their uncouth jargon: 'Feet bleeding on the head of this fellow rock.' All the busy surmising as to where she could possibly have gone were soon set at rest, and, as the blacks had conjectured, her dead body was found on the summit of the rock.

There is always great satisfaction when the remains of the lost are found. Uncertainty is the most calamitous state which the mind can be thrown into. The heart is choked, and there is an unutterable anguish in the pent up and conflicting emotions of hope and fear. In one case which I knew of, a man, with his wife and family, had committed the mistake of settling at a certain place beside a dense scrub. The youngest child, the only boy in the family, had been unguardedly permitted to enter it; he was lost, and never found. The bereaved

mother drank deeply of the cup of sorrow; her mind was ever restless. She could think of nothing, do nothing, but what concerned the finding of her lost boy; and no words of peace and consolation could be heard until some trace of him could be found. Thoughts of him were ever recurring to her mind; he might be found in one place—he might be found in another—and her requests to go in search were often attended to when she was unable to go herself. All hope of earthly care had fled from her dwelling; a mantle of death seemed to cover it; the breeze which had wafted the sweetest fragrance to her, seemed now to bear the most poisonous exhalations; death and terror were couched in every fallen tree, and their branches, waving in the wind, appeared to be triumphing in the victory which they had obtained over her and her boy. Sleep fled her pillow, and, prostrated in body and mind, she sank into the deep waters of suffering, of bereavement, and of ceaseless wailing, and found an early grave.

The aborigines are of inestimable value to inexperienced travellers. There are few stations at which some of them may not be found loitering, and young lads especially, are always ready to mount a horse and go a long distance for a trifling reward.

CHAPTER VIII.

DROUGHTS AND FLOODS.

COAST AND DIVIDING RANGES—A DROUGHT AND ITS EFFECTS—
—SINGULAR ORIGIN OF A FIRE—HOT WINDS—AGRICUL-
TURE IN THE INTERIOR—SANDY AND SWELLING BLIGHT
—BULLOCK DRIVERS — CARRIERS — STOCKHOLDERS —
BURNING GRASS EXPERIENCE—DAMS—OVERSTOCKING—
LOSSES DURING THE DROUGHT OF 1865-6—VEGETABLES—
FALL OF RAIN—SEASONS OF DROUGHTS AND FLOODS, AND
CONSEQUENT LOSSES—AGRICULTURE.

LIABILITY to severe droughts and to great floods are distinguishing characteristics of Australia, and it would be in vain for the most hopeful of the speculative admirers of the future of that Continent to attempt to gainsay or ignore those great facts, which tell severely on the cultivators of the soil, and render agriculture a most hazardous undertaking, save in some famed localities, as along the coast, and in the dividing ranges. One would be apt to suppose that floods would not be so disastrous to the farmer as droughts, but in many places, the whole of the land available for agriculture is situated on the margin of creeks and rivers, and a flood, when of unusual size, is as

disastrous as a drought, in consequence of the losses sustained in the carrying away of fencing, crops, and sometimes even houses, whilst the land is frequently spoiled by the sand and *debris* which have been deposited. A drought, when of long continuance, is felt by all classes of the community, and is indeed a fearful visitation of Divine Providence. In a continuous journey of four hundred miles inland, during a time of severe drought, I did not observe a blade of green grass; bush fires prevailed everywhere; the dry and withered grass crumbled in the hand into powder, and the whole was set fire to with the object of preparing the ground for the new grass which was to grow after the expected fall of rain. The heaven was as brass, the earth as iron—the sun and moon had changed their appearance, were as if clad in sackcloth, or red as blood, when seen through a smoked glass. In consequence of the black vapours with which the atmosphere was filled, from the bush fires far and near, the sun's rays, during the height of the day, poured down the most intense heat. The birds on the trees might be seen panting for breath;—water, cold, cold water! It is only under such circumstances that one can fully understand the apt illustration of Scripture story. The trees afford only miserable shelter, and there is no place so much coveted as the shadow of a rock for protection against the oppressive heat of the sun's rays. There is also great danger in travelling in the heat of the mid-day sun; and it is at such periods that 'the

smiting of the sun by day'—cases of sunstroke—are reported as happening to those who incautiously expose themselves to the deadly heat without the aid of an umbrella or a proper covering for the head.

There was one well-authenticated case of a conflagration which had originated in a singular manner, related to me by the owner of the station where the fire had originated, in the interior of Queensland. The day was broiling hot; there was no living object to be seen moving about anywhere, save a stray lizard, or a magpie, in search of food, and the usual stock-yard attendants, carrion crows. The birds had sheltered themselves in the leafy branches of the trees, and the ants, which are usually so very busy in going to and fro in their thoroughfares on the ground, did not venture to come out of their nests. The cattle were all in their encampments, performing the offices of mutual kindness in constantly wiping away with their tails from one another the clouds of flies which were continually endeavouring to settle upon them. The sheep were gathered in clusters at the roots of trees, panting heavily from the oppressive heat, the shepherd in charge of them sitting drowsily on a fallen tree. Outdoor manual labour might be said to be impossible save to the blacks, and indoor labour might be said to consist chiefly in wiping the perspiration from the head and face, and in going to quench the thirst with the trickling drops which oozed from the canvas bags of water suspended in

the verandah. It was on such a day of intense heat that my informant observed smoke arise near one of the outbuildings of the homestead. The smoke was increasing in volume, and the fire from which it proceeded became visible and was soon spreading fast in the direction of the dwelling-house, feeding itself on shreds of bark and chips of wood, which covered the ground thickly. The buildings would have been all in a flame in a short time had it not been for the timely discovery. The origin of the fire was clearly traced to an axe which had been left outside, the powerful heat of the sun's rays having acted on the polished blade and ignited shreds of bark beside it.

The hot winds are supposed to be occasioned by the perpendicular rays of the summer sun falling on the sandstone ridges, and the large tracts of country covered with loose stones in the north-western interior. The winds passing over these parts of country are heated, and deprived of their moisture. They present an obstacle of a formidable character to the successful pursuit of cultivation over a great part of the interior. Though no dependence of any kind is placed on agriculture, there will be very frequently found at stations patches for growing maize, sorgum, and saccharatum, pumpkins, melons, and sometimes wheat. The work is regarded as having very much of the nature of a venture; and a crop in one out of two, three, or five years will not be a disappointment. In districts where wheat

can be grown, and where there is no convenience of carriage, or sufficient population to maintain a steam flour-mill, every homestead is provided with a portable iron hand flour-mill, to grind the wheat into flour, an operation in connection with which the aborigines sometimes make themselves very useful. One of the earliest clergymen in New South Wales narrated to the writer rather an interesting episode in his life in connection with a drought and the hand flour-mill. After a long journey to visit a family, he was greeted by the mother with the not very gratifying intelligence, 'We have not a morsel of bread (there had been a drought during the preceding year, and flour was very scarce), but if you'll wait a little, the wheat is about ripe.' With sickle in hand she went to the ripe field, reaped a few handfuls, thrashed the ears, the cracking noise of the hand flour-mill instantly followed, and flour and bread were speedily produced from the recently upstanding ears of wheat.

Veils are in general use during hot weather in summer as a protection against the flies, which are very troublesome. In a time of severe drought, in travelling the main lines of road, veils are absolutely indispensable; and the fabric of which they are made requires to be of a much closer texture than that which is usually worn. It is impossible to travel even a short distance without being enveloped in clouds of dust; and the eyes, ears, and nostrils are all liable to be stuffed with fine sand. Veils would not seem, however,

to form any protection against the 'sandy' and 'swelling blight' — complaints of the eyes — to which some persons, at this season of the year, are liable to be affected. The 'sandy-blight' is so named from the painful sensation as sand in the eyes; the 'swelling-blight' is not painful, and is attributed to the sting of a small fly. They are both likely to be occasioned, however, by the dry, parched state of the atmosphere during the continuance of hot winds. They do not continue long, and are easily remediable by shading the eyes from the sun, and washing them with weak gonlard water.

However great the heat of the sun, whatever the state of the roads, and however arduous travelling may be, travelling must be done, at any cost or sacrifice; and bullock teams, with drays, are always to be met toiling slowly along, or, occasionally, horse teams, moving at a much brisker pace, the men in charge of them so besmeared with dust, their faces so black—the perspiration producing with the dust a coating of mud—that it is impossible to distinguish the white teamsters from those black ones, who are sometimes found in charge of bullock drays from far distant stations, and who have been taught the useful arts of life. The teamsters on the road bear no proportion to the number encamped at the water-holes and the crossing places of rivers, who have been unable to continue their journey in consequence of the weak state of their bullocks, and the loss of some of them by death. They

are what is called 'stuck up;' cannot move out of their place, and must remain where they are until there is food on the road, or till they get fresh bullocks which are able to stand the journey. Carriage, as a necessary consequence, rises to a high price, and there is no alternative left to many, when crops have failed, but to betake themselves to an occupation of which they never thought before—viz., carrying on the road—showing how much manners and modes of life may be influenced by a country, and how vain it is to struggle against forces beyond all human control. If a drought continues, and there is no appearance of a change taking place, in the shape of a fall of rain, the most doleful forebodings are sometimes entertained by the stockholders in some parts of the country, of the calamity which hangs over them in the probable loss of their stock from starvation and want of water; whilst not a few have their fears deeply embittered in reflecting on the unfortunate error which they have committed in burning so much of their runs. And it is in cases of this nature that experience comes so much to the aid of the Australian settler, in the making of 'dams,' and guarding against the great danger of 'overstocking.'

There were some stations where the extremely distressing remedy was resorted to, of killing the lambs and calves to save their mothers. A gentleman, whom I met on the road, said that he had seen sixteen good horses dead in one water-hole. They had gone there to drink, and had sunk in the slimy bottom and perished. The

superintendent of a cattle station said that he had lost seven hundred cows; another superintendent said that he had lost about one-third of the stock, and that this was about the loss sustained by many other stations. The sheep-farmers, in some parts of the country, also suffered great losses of sheep, a fulfilment of predictions which I had heard from very old colonists.

With respect to the very severe drought of 1865, and the beginning of 1866, which was felt over a great part of South Australia, Victoria, and New South Wales, I think I cannot do better than give the following notices which occurs in the *Sydney Morning Herald*, of January 20th, 1866, with reference to the last-named colony:—

The first extract is remarkable as showing the uncertain nature of Australian weather. 'Just a week before Christmas (the middle of summer), the frightful heat of the weather was suddenly arrested, in the south and west, and for three days these districts were plunged into mid-winter. At Kiandra there was a heavy fall of snow, which covered the ground in some places to the depth of three feet; at Queenbean, hail, rain, and sleet prevailed—whilst the heavy ranges south from that town, and on the opposite side of the Murrumbidgee, a wintry coating of snow lay until the Tuesday before Christmas. Since then there has been one unbroken series of fierce winds and burning heat. The thermometer at various places and times has ranged from 120 to 140 degrees in the sun, and

from 80 to 101 degrees in the shade. Relief has been temporarily given by occasional thunder-storms, which, whilst they have deluged the particular localities over which they have burst, have been exceedingly partial in their distribution of the blessed and much-looked-for element—water. At Beza there has been no rain for the last ten months. At Ulladulla there has not been, for the last twelve months, a sufficient fall of rain to penetrate one inch into the ground. At the Wimmera, water is so scarce that the least valuable of the horse stock is being shot, in order to prolong the supply to the remainder ; and emus, not usually seen in that quarter, come tamely up to drink at the casks that have been filled for the horses. A gentleman, who recently travelled down the Bland Creek, states that he saw no less than six hundred head of dead cattle, in about twelve miles from the creek. There are very few stations, in the far west, where a serviceable horse can be obtained. Water is not to be had, except at distances ranging from thirty-five to sixty-five miles apart, and, unless these places are made, there is no chance of a drink ; and, as is usual upon occasions like the present, we hear occasionally of fearful deaths in the bush, for the traveller who misses his road just now is a doomed man. The long stretch of country lying between the Lachlan and the Murrumbidgee, and known as the Levels, from its flat and unbroken character, has suffered perhaps as severely as any part of the country ; and, as it has been pretty thickly settled

upon, this suffering is all the more distressing. Many of the residents have now to send long distances for water, and even that, which is their whole dependence, will not, it is calculated, last more than six weeks longer, should no rain fall in the interim. Those water-holes are also almost unapproachable, from the large number of dead and dying cattle that lie round them, the former in all stages of decomposition. Owing to the state of the country, it has become exceedingly difficult to get carriage for loading any great distance into the interior, unless at very high rates. Bullock teams cannot possibly travel, and for horse teams, the carriers have to take with them all the food required for the consumption of their animals. A letter from Walget states that on one station, where one hundred and twenty thousand sheep had been guaranteed to the shearers, only sixty thousand could be brought into the shed; and that, on another station in the same district, only one hundred and thirteen thousand were shorn where there should have been one hundred and eighty thousand. In each case the deficiency had been caused by deaths in the flocks, owing to the want of food and the scarcity of water.' With reference to the large sheep farms in Walget, an estimate of the extent of land which goes to form one of them, may be easily arrived at by calculating five, six, or seven, as the number of acres to a sheep which the land is estimated to carry. It is an observation which I have heard old Australians make, that when there were

droughts in the south, there was rain in the north, and *vice versa*. This seems to have been the case in connection with this drought, as there was no want of rain in Queensland.

One hundred, or even ten yards, of a New Zealand stream or river, choked full of Captain Cook's watercress, would be a prize indeed in the interior of Australia at any time, but more especially during a time of long-continued droughts; it would be something agreeable and refreshing for the eyes, but it would be much more so to the palate in seasoning the unvarying round of beef, tea, and damper, or bread. The want of vegetables is often severely felt. The wealthy stock-owners are usually well provided in their stores with pickles and preserved potatoes, but these are too expensive articles of consumption for the working people. Along the coast, and on the dividing ranges, pumpkins, all the varieties of melons, English vegetables and fruit, such as peaches and apricots, are grown plentifully. In the interior, however, and where hot scorching winds prevail in summer, the fruit is roasted on the trees, and no succulent vegetable of any kind is able to stand the withering heat. The human constitution, both bodily and mentally, is a delicate one. It was manifestly the design of the Creator, in providing such fruits as grapes, peaches, oranges, melons, etc., as the peculiar productions of a warm climate, that the constitution should be supported and cherished, that men should not merely live, but enjoy life; and there

would be less intemperance heard of in Australia if those resources which nature has provided were within reach of the people, during the time of the occurrence of such droughts as those which have been described. I have seen parts of the country in the high dividing ranges, which, visited by thunder-storms, were as green as an emerald, with waving fields of grain, pumpkins, melons, potatoes, turnips, cabbages, carrots, and all the other varieties of English vegetables, growing in the greatest profusion, and where they had never been known to fail.

When rain falls—and if it has been general and plentiful, a drought is very soon forgotten—the whole surface of the earth soon begins to smile, a carpet of the deepest green takes the place of all that was dry and withered—and it is not in human nature to resist the enchanting influence. ‘A drought will not come back again,’ is the expression, whilst men dismiss from their minds all thoughts of the occurrence of another drought, more especially at the board of festive entertainment. The sudden change is remarkable, the grass grows rapidly, and there would seem to be no limit to the number of cattle, sheep, or horses, which the land is capable of carrying, or to the crops of grain which might be cultivated. The dryness of the air, and the heat of the sun, however, soon change the green appearance of the earth’s surface into a brown colour. A drought is most severely felt during the spring and summer months, and may prevail throughout the whole

of August, September, October, November, December, and January. Floods, of which there may be a succession, prevail during the autumn and winter months, February, March, April, May, June, and July. If there is a continuation of two or three days' rain, which has been general, a flood will inevitably follow. Graziers look on, however, in such cases, with great indifference, unless they have teams on the road, and supplies for their stations unduly detained. It is very different, however, with the small settlers, and with gold-diggers, to whom travelling on the road with heavily laden drays is almost impossible. The rate of carriage rises to an exorbitant figure, and what with that rate and the consequent scarcity of provisions, living becomes very expensive. There are storekeepers, however, who have anticipated all this, and who make a harvest both of droughts and floods. I saw one river which had risen forty feet within a few hours; there are other rivers which overflow their banks, carrying destruction in their course, sweeping away fencing, crops, sometimes houses, and spoiling the cultivated land. The newspapers relate the stereotyped tales of floods, great losses, exploits of men with boats on the rivers, near the coast, and persons saved and drowned. There is such a scarcity of water in many places, that the possibility of being deluged with it is about one of the last things thought of, and is regarded as something of the nature of 'being too good news to be true.' In rather a level part of country in the interior where I had been, and where it was difficult

to get a drink of water, a shepherd told me shortly afterwards that there was an inland sea sixty miles in breadth—he meant back waters. Whilst crossing a creek, a few days after a flood, there was a hutkeeper standing, with a most rueful countenance; he had lost, he said, seventy pounds; he was afraid to keep his money in the hut, and for safety, had concealed it in a fallen tree; but the flood had carried away the fallen tree during the night, and with it his seventy pounds. One of the earliest sheep-farmers in Queensland told me that he once lost five thousand sheep in consequence of a flood which he had not anticipated—and which none of the other sheep-farmers, who were also sufferers, had anticipated—the river had risen high and suddenly, and, as no rain had fallen before, where they were situated, the flood had come upon them unawares.

Agriculture is largely engaged in by those who have other occupations and sources of income, independently of their farms, such as carriers, sawyers, storekeepers, innkeepers, etc. The greatest agriculturists are the graziers or squatters who are in districts where the climate is favourable; and they have great advantages in folding their sheep on the cultivated land, thus cleaning it of weeds and enriching the soil. A failure in the crop of grain does not incommode them much, however, as their great mainstays are the crops of wool and the increase of stock. South Australia is the only one of the Australian colonies where wheat-growing has taken its place as the leading industrial pursuit, and from which

there are large exports of both wheat and flour every year to the other colonies. Chili and California are the two other principal places upon which the people in Victoria, New South Wales, and Queensland, have been hitherto largely dependent for supplies of flour.

CHAPTER IX.

CONVICTISM.

CAUTION IN THE USE OF THE WORD CONVICT—AN INCORRIGIBLE—A SETTLER MURDERED—SINGULAR STORY OF A CONVICT—REGRETTING NOT BEING EXECUTED—A BONNYMUIR REBEL AND A STIRLING CLERGYMAN—SPECIALS—OLD CRAWLERS—A MUTILATED EDINBURGH BURGLAR—TASMANIA—CONVIOTS AND EMIGRANTS—A WOLF IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING—A NINEVITE—POINTERS OR PROFESSIONAL SWINDLERS—WEALTHY BUSHRANGERS AND THE NEW SOUTH WALES GOVERNMENT.

THERE is no word in the English language of which one requires to make a more studied use in Australia than the word 'convict.' It is entirely erased from the vocabulary of those who desire to 'live peaceably with all men,' and who have learned enough of the conventionalism of society to prevent them from offending against its rules and maxims. A celebrated writer, who did not form a very high estimate of human nature, said that 'man never forgives;' and it was with great truth that the King of Israel, amid a choice of evils, chose the least, and prayed, 'Let me not fall into the hand of man.'

The question, 'What will we do with our convicts?' is one that has taxed the ingenuity of those who have had more to do with them than any others—who have had them in their employment as 'assigned servants' from the Government. An old naval officer, who was eminently qualified to deal with them, had at one time a great number of them in his service engaged in felling trees, in fencing, etc.; but there was one who would not leave him after the expiration of his sentence. 'I have had him flogged times without number,' he said to the writer, who was staying one night at his house. 'Not a whit was the man ever the better—as incorrigible a scoundrel as ever was in this world; I have put a rope round his neck, and on horseback dragged him after me back and forward through that pond,' pointing towards a pond at some distance from the house, 'but it was all of no use;' and looking at me significantly he concluded, 'the man will not leave my service.' The incorrigible looked old and worn-out, and did not seem as if he were able to go very far. He must have been so habituated to punishment that it had become a kind of necessity to him, and likely he felt at times uneasy if he did not receive any; all that was human in his nature must have been well-nigh lashed out of him, leaving nothing but something of the nature of a spaniel dog. Though a stern and rigorous taskmaster, the officer alluded to probably acted justly and honestly towards his 'assigned servants;' and this was no doubt the ground of the incorrigible's attachment to him.

But masters of this kind cannot be found always. One employer of convicts, who was of a most niggardly disposition, the owner of a large and valuable property, which had been made valuable by the labour of his convict servants, paid the penalty of his life by a blind selfishness in supplying them with bad quality of rations, and keeping them long at work. The residue of a large fire, which contained some charred human bones, was all that remained to testify to the mystery of his disappearance. The men who had been in his employment, every one of whom were convicts, declared themselves innocent, and nothing could be brought home to them. One of them, however, who acted as cook, and who was always about the house, could not easily avoid being suspected of knowing something regarding his master's death. On regaining his liberty he married, became a man well to do in the world, with a fine young family of children growing up around him. Compared to the taking away of life, all other crimes would seem to be as shadows; and though he never confessed the murder, there were not wanting indications of a fearfully-troubled mind, especially in the fact that he frequently retired and held communion with the dark places of the forest at midnight hours.

'Truth is stranger than fiction.' A lad about sixteen years of age was sentenced, at the Inverness Circuit Court, to fourteen years' penal servitude for sheep-stealing. The grazier who laid the accusation against him, deeply regretted afterwards that he had done so,

as his own sons had been the instigators to the crime. The law must take its course, however, and nothing that he could do could avail to obtain the lad's release from the hands of justice. Being much interested in him, and acquainted with a settler in New South Wales, he gave him a letter to be delivered to the settler when he arrived there. For greater security he sewed the letter in the lining of the lad's jacket. The lad forgot all about the letter, until it dropped one day, when his jacket had gone to tatters. Singularly enough, the letter was directed to his employer, to whom he had been assigned by the Government. The document was of considerable service to him; he was afterwards promoted to the situation of overseer, and a large number of men were placed under his charge. He gained the reputation of being an execrable tyrant, however, and he supplied all that he wanted in common sense and knowledge of mankind by the lash. The want of education, and knowledge of keeping accounts, were a sad hindrance to his advancement in the world. It was from the class of overseers who were at that time employed that many of the wealthiest settlers have sprung, and he almost stood alone in failing to avail himself of advantages and opportunities which had been so easily placed within his reach.

It has been said that guilt receives more protection than innocence; and it is remarkable what an amount of interest is taken in a great criminal—what sympathy is excited as to his fate—what a large place

he occupies in public attention, and how strong is the desire for obtaining information regarding him. No item of intelligence concerning him comes amiss; how he sleeps, what he says, and what he does are chronicled as subjects of the greatest public concern; whilst it is probable that no sympathy or concern of any kind will be at the same time extended to those who have been grievously wronged and injured beyond all calculation by him. If a reprieve has been granted, and the great criminal, instead of being sent to the scaffold, is transported for life, the news is heralded far and wide, and takes its place in the latest telegraphic intelligence, along it may be with announcements of the movements of members of the Royal family, and other matters of great national interest. It may be interesting to those who take delight in the horrible, to be informed that their sympathies may be sometimes misplaced in behalf of a great criminal, and that the satisfaction which they receive on hearing that he is not to be executed is sometimes unnecessary. I certainly knew of one man who had been sentenced to be executed, and who was reprieved (the sentence of death being transmuted into transportation for life), who complained to me that he had not been executed. 'I was ready to die then,' he said, 'but am not ready now; a worse man than ever I was.'

It serves to illustrate the large possession which clergymen hold in the minds of those with whom they have to do, that actions which they themselves may

think little of at the moment, sink down deep into the hearts of others, and may serve, as in the case of the person I am about to refer to, as subject for some minds to ruminate on to the close of the latest lifetime. The circumstances of the case of this individual are somewhat extraordinary. He was one of the 'Bonnymuir rebels' sentenced to transportation for life; but had received a free pardon, after a number of years' servitude, having been all the time employed by Government—a great advantage, he thought, preferable to having his lot cast into the hands, it might be, of some ignorant and tyrannical master. He was confined, he said to me, forty days and nights in the 'den' of Stirling Castle, with very little daylight and fresh air, and scarcely enough of food to keep life in the body. One of the town clergymen came to visit him and the other prisoners; he pleaded strongly with him to bring him some food; he came next day and gave him a *bible*! The man never seemed to have been able to forget this; morning, evening, and mid-day, it was the theme of his discourse, the clergyman being the subject of deep, bitter, vehement abuse and outcry. All the badness which this world could produce was in that man, and a favourite figure of speech of his was to make use of the clergyman's name when he wished to express horror or detestation of anything. 'I kept the bible,' he said, and he showed it to me: 'but——.' In all probability the clergyman was the last person with whom he had any friendly intercourse at home, and the pangs of

hunger, disappointment, and insult which he felt on being presented with the bible instead of food, had caused a deep wound in his heart—a wound which always opened and bled at every thought that occurred to him in his exile of the land of his birth, his relations, and all that he had on earth; and it is always to the last link in the chain that was broken during separation from home that the thoughts of the exile are first cast, and the heart looks first to be united to—the last friendly or unfriendly word that was spoken—the last hillside that was seen, the last parting farewell; and of how much service would a little kindness have been to this man, who believed that he was fighting for the liberties of his country, if on leaving that land for which he suffered, and was suffering so much, there had been, as it were, some lovely spot in his fatherland upon which he might at times lay his weary head and aching heart to rest? On regaining his liberty he saved his earnings carefully, and purchased a piece of land. A knowledge of the industrial pursuits of the colony, which he had acquired during his servitude, enabled him to judge correctly, and make a wise investment of his savings and his own labour. The uncertainty of the seasons dissuaded him from agriculture. Orange trees had been introduced, and were found to suit the climate. Accordingly, he prepared part of his land for the purpose of an orangery; and within a very few years the young trees which he had planted brought him the means of an easy and comfortable

livelihood. They had grown to a very large size, and his small, unpretending dwelling-house was nearly concealed in the midst of the thick green foliage, all dotted over with oranges, like spheres of gold.

A laudable consideration was shown by the Government to a class of convicts belonging to what are usually styled 'the upper classes of society,' and who were known by the name of 'specials.' A settlement was set apart for them, and they were exempted from severe manual labour. One of them made himself very useful, like many others, by teaching in families; he was wont to receive letters from his wife and daughters; but it would have been kindness to him not to have written so frequently, as he became quite unmanned on hearing from any of them, and weeks would elapse before he could summon fortitude to open the letters and read their contents. There were many whose wives and families joined them in their exile; in some instances this was an advantage, but unfortunately the habits of some of them were so entirely changed, that they might almost, with some propriety, be said not to be the same individuals; and a union, however blest it might have been at home, did not always promise to be the same when entered on again under entirely different circumstances.

Many of them, who had received tickets-of-leave, and others who had served their time under Government for the full period of their sentence, bore the brunt of the battle with the aborigines in entering into the ser-

vice of the pioneers, and were the first to take up country for grazing. The pastoral life, following flocks of sheep, and riding after cattle, was a much more agreeable and preferable occupation to them than clearing land and working at farms under a scorching sun. They are now scattered over all the occupied interior, and are mostly debilitated old men, to whom the settlers gave the name of 'old crawlers.' There was one with whom I met who presented a frightful spectacle—very distressing to look upon. I had incidentally heard from the owner of a station that the blacks had been violent when he took possession of the country which he occupied, had killed some of his shepherds, and that one man, after being fearfully mangled, had recovered most unexpectedly. This was the very man. His head thrown back over his shoulders had remained fixed in the same position in which the blacks had left him, they having believed that he was dead. He was greatly shocked on learning that I had never heard of him in Scotland. 'I thought,' he said, 'every one had heard of *me* there.' On putting the question to him, his fame, it appeared, was founded on some burglaries which he had committed in the New Town of Edinburgh, and which had been blazed abroad as cases which had displayed great daring and dexterity!

There can be no doubt whatever of the material advantages—of the boon, in fact—which transportation was to a large number of criminals. They were

placed in a much better position than they would have been in Great Britain and Ireland for acquiring wealth and independence. Many of them never served out the period of their sentence ; good behaviour was rewarded by a ticket-of-leave, and they were entirely free to dispose of their labour to their own best advantage. They have been the most migratory class of the community, and will be found dispersed over all the Australian colonies. I heard an old clergyman in Tasmania, better known as Van Dieman's Land, stoutly maintaining that there were fewer old convicts there in proportion to free emigrants than in any of the settlements in Australia ; and this notwithstanding the immense number who had been transported there. It is very common at the Antipodes for persons to change their names when they wish to make a fresh start in life. It will not be always found prudent to permit one's mind to be much influenced against old convicts. I have known some of them take pride in asserting that there was more crime committed by free emigrants than by old convicts. This may not be the case. There is no denying, however, that the refuse of Great Britain and Ireland has always been deemed eligible as emigrants to the Australian colonies.

It is not easy escaping the conviction, and it has never been, I presume, attempted to be denied, that convictism has tended in no small degree to give a distinct character and complexion to certain phases of Aus-

tralian life which it would not have otherwise worn, and a knowledge of this constitutes no small part of that much-vaunted 'Colonial experience,' extolled as the foundation of success. 'What is the use of a friend,' I have heard one man say, 'but to take the use of him?' Very comforting doctrine this, and the friendships of some people are more to be dreaded than their enmities. The following are not bad illustrations of this kind of friendship. The Reverend Thomas James was a young clergyman newly arrived from England, entrusted with the establishment of a mission in the interior of New South Wales, in connection with the Church to which he belonged. The commencement is always the most trying and difficult part of the work. The giving of money to a ball, a horse-race, or a circus, people are always ready enough to understand the propriety of, but giving money towards the erection of a church, or the maintenance of a clergyman, is another thing altogether. A man will disburse a hundred pounds for a box at a theatre, or spend as much in one night's feasting, but a 'shilling!'—'no,' he 'could not afford it' towards a charitable object. He speaks the truth here quite correctly, 'he cannot afford it,' and it would be downright punishment for him to give anything; the task would be as great as it would be for an infant to lift a millstone from the earth. It is all easily understood, a new class of sentiments are called into operation—the benevolent ones, naturally, perhaps not

very strong, and weak from want of exercise, cannot bear the pressure of any weight being laid upon them. Many such persons are more to be pitied than condemned. If it comes to a parley, the amount of human ingenuity displayed in evading the question is astonishing. The man labours with all his soul to find out excuses, and pleads as strongly as if it was for his own life, that he might be spared; and no general on the battle-field scans the ground more keenly, takes a wider range of vision in guarding the outposts, and providing against the danger of a sudden attack, that he may not be worsted in his conflict with the enemy. There is always more lost than gained by these contributors. They are always certain to fall upon the stratagem for escaping giving money by finding fault with the object of it. The inventive faculty is set busily to work, and when the object is a clergyman it often appears as if all the faults are found with him which can be found. The clergyman may not be much to their favour or liking, but it is well for these Cræsus to be put in mind of the Divine ordinance of the Christian ministry, that it is simply for them to do their duty, leaving the clergyman to do his; and that if all were to act as they do, Divine institutions would perish from the earth. There was a mission fund, a building fund, and other funds in favour of which the Reverend Thomas James was endeavouring to enlist the sympathies of the people amongst whom he was labouring. He was a popular preacher, was well received at the stations, embryo

townships, and gold-fields, which he periodically visited. In this ardent monetary undertaking, it was almost impossible for him not to conceive a personal attachment towards a man who had always manifested the greatest interest in his welfare, and who was a liberal contributor to the funds. This person represented himself as coming into the district with a view to commence a store on an extensive scale. Mr. James had a heart above suspicion, and, as the man had no house of his own at the time, he kindly invited him to make his house his home. The offer was thankfully accepted, and this was really all that the person desired for his liberal contribution to the funds, and the interest which he had taken in Mr. James. He was known everywhere afterwards as the clergyman's friend, and was trusted by every one accordingly as a highly respectable man. Accompanying Mr. James in his journeys, he was admitted into the privacy of domestic circles—knew all about the mail and the money that was being sent down to Sydney. The mail had been several times 'stuck up' and robbed, but not a ray of suspicion ever flashed across the mind of any one that it was the clergyman's friend who had really been committing all the depredations. As a crowning feat of impudent rascality, and taking still greater advantages of the shelter which the clergyman unwittingly afforded him for carrying on his nefarious business, he accompanied him to Sydney—paid all the expenses of the journey, and procured an introduction, through

Mr. James, to the wealthy merchants in connection with the church of the latter. The merchants were delighted with the new country connection, and the prospect of the large profits with which these country connections are usually attended. Mr. James's acquaintance with their new customer was a sufficient guarantee of the latter's trustworthiness, and they gave him credit to the amount of three thousand pounds' worth of merchandise. The packages of merchandise were forwarded to their destination up the country, but never reached that destination. The addresses were altered at a small shipping port, where they were landed, put on board a vessel for California, and nothing was afterwards seen or heard of the clergyman's friend. White savages are a thousand times worse than black. It is insulting, in fact, to humanity to compare them to human beings—they are like vultures, with outstretched wings, floating in the air, looking out for prey—or reptiles, creeping stealthily on the ground. Perhaps, indeed, they may be compared with nothing so favourably as the boa constrictor, which first covers with its saliva the object it prepares to devour. 'What a fool,' said a 'gentleman' once to me in Sydney, 'your friend is; he has bought that place from me; he might have had it a thousand pounds cheaper; however, it is so much in my pocket.' This 'Ninevite' happily united a certain business with a lodging-house, which was well known. My friend, with his wife and family, had been staying at the lodging-house, paying for their

board. Strangers in the town, it was almost impossible to be insensible to the attention bestowed upon them, or indifferent to the advice tendered to them in the name of the sincerest friendship. They were honest, believing people, and considered other people to be as honest as themselves. They had been living in their sylvan solitude in the interior for a very long period, by a life of persevering industry had saved a few thousand pounds, and had come to pass the end of their days within sound of the Sabbath bells in the beautiful town of Sydney. In addition to the thousand pounds which their 'friend' confessed to have robbed them of, he led them completely astray by false information, and might be said to have almost ruined them, as they would have to begin the world anew. There are cool, calculating persons to be met with, whose minds are whetted like a keen instrument in the pursuit of gain; all mankind is their lawful prey, and when they succeed, they claim an intellectual superiority—esteem themselves 'clever'—whilst their villainies redound to their honour and credit. In colonial phraseology, 'pointers' is the name by which such persons are usually distinguished and stigmatized; that is, they follow the pursuit of gain as pointers do game, are always on the watch for ignorant and unsuspecting persons, whom they are never so likely to succeed in plundering as under the guise of friendship.

It is right to 'give the devil his due,' as the proverb says, and there should not be laid to the charge of

convicts that which they have very little to do with, 'bushranging.' The bushrangers of the present day are young men who have grown up wild in the bush—mostly stockmen—who have become accustomed to galloping after horses and cattle, and to following a thieving mode of life, by taking horses and cattle to which they have no right. That it is not destitution which prompts many of them to lead a life of highway robbery is clear enough from the fact of some of them being very wealthy. One Jamieson, a mere lad, inherited, when in prison, twenty thousand pounds, which were forfeited to the Government. Hall, who was shot by a policeman, and whom the Hon. John Robertson called the 'king of the bushrangers,' was also a mere youth and the owner of a station. Bushranging had not been heard of for about thirty years previously, and was not resumed until after the advent of manhood suffrage. It broke out when the people's passions were excited in the universal cry of 'Free selection before survey'—the right to go and settle anywhere they liked; and, when the Legislature of New South Wales, pandering to the passions of the people, passed a law for them to go and settle anywhere they liked, with the addition of a bounty of fifteen shillings in the pound credit to all who would settle on the land.

The love of applause is common to young men in the bush, as it is common to young men elsewhere; and it must have been highly pleasing to these desperadoes to find their names, with accounts of the robberies which

they had committed, prominently mentioned in the public press, with no less a personage than the Hon. John Robertson, who had been Premier, pronouncing one of them to be a 'king.' In a different state of society, and in another country, these young men would have led a forlorn hope in entering the breach in a fortress, and would have filled the trenches with their dead bodies for their comrades to pass over. Under a good government they might have been valuable members of society. Scores of mounted policemen, with Government contracts for their maintenance as if for an army, in pursuit of bushrangers, and a reward of five thousand pounds for the capture of five of them, dead or alive, is very expensive work. It would be indicative of greater economy, one would suppose, if the Government of New South Wales, instead of making a law for people to scatter themselves, would form settlements, where they might all be brought within the healing influences of society, and receive the benefits of education and religion.

Whatever evils New South Wales may have inherited from convictism, demagogues have proved themselves the greatest criminals, and have done more injury than convicts.

CHAPTER X.

STATE AID TO RELIGION.

STATE AID AND VOLUNTARIISM APPLICABLE TO TWO DIFFERENT STATES OF SOCIETY—ADVANTAGES OF VOLUNTARIISM IN THE COLONIES—CO-EXISTING STATE AID AND VOLUNTARIISM AN ANOMALY AT THE ANTIPODES—GOVERNMENT INTERFERENCE AND DISAGREEMENT AMONGST THE PEOPLE—A CLERICAL RARA AVIS—SPHERES OF THE CLERGYMAN'S DUTY—MISSIONS.

THE much vexed question of 'State aid to Religion,' which continues to agitate the minds of many of the people in New South Wales, the only one of the Australian Colonies, including Tasmania and New Zealand, where State aid threatens to be permanent, in consequence of the 'Church and School lands,' appropriated by the British Government, is one of those questions amenable to law, to reason, and to scripture. Many of the arguments in favour of State aid to religion may be right, and many of the arguments against it may also be right, and they might be all used by one and the same person, as in the case of Dr. Chalmers, without exposing him to the charge of untruth or of in-

consistency, as they apply to the Church in two different states and in two different conditions of society. As the people advance in general intelligence and material prosperity, there will be an unwillingness to bear restraints, and persons will very naturally claim the right to think and to act for themselves. To whatever extent the people may deem themselves entitled to the political franchise, there is no denying them the right to the Christian priesthood, to the free and unqualified right of laying their offerings on the altar, whilst they who minister at the altar shall live by the altar, and they who preach the gospel shall live by the gospel. Experience bears ample testimony to the fact, that a Church possesses more effective strength and greater powers of expansion, when each individual member is charged with its support, and entrusted with a share in its cares and its responsibilities, than when the members of the Church are individually freed from those cares and responsibilities, and the maintenance of the clergyman is provided for by the State. The Church is a living power—the greatest living power on earth; it cannot be trusted too much, and the greatest wrong and injury that can be done to the Church is to distrust it and go to the State for aid. The mere eleemosynary support, a grant of money from the Government treasury, has nothing, of course, to do with the maintenance of clergymen of the established Churches in Great Britain, the source from which that maintenance is derived having been sacredly devoted by pious persons for

behoof of the Church, and is therefore a legitimate maintenance for the clergymen. The Church is the most precious deposit with which the world has ever been entrusted, and it might be to 'cast pearls before swine' to withdraw from it those earthly defences with which omnipotent care has enwrapped it. The Church has derived innumerable benefits from the State, as it has been preserved pure and intact, its rights and liberties safely guarded and protected from all attacks of enemies from within, and of enemies from without. There is nothing, however, in voluntaryism, under certain circumstances, to render it odious even to the most bigoted State Churchmen; indeed, there is a great deal to afford matter for joy and thankfulness. Suspicion always attaches itself to a State-aid clergyman; there seems always to be a something which is not right about him; there is a chord wanting—the chord of the heart. When a State-aid clergyman dies, the first question discoursed of is—who is to fill his place? but, when a voluntary clergyman dies, his name, generally speaking, becomes a household word, hallowed, it may be, generation after generation, and his utterances may sometimes be more useful when he is dead than when he was living. Let a State-aid clergyman do ten times more work than a voluntary clergyman, he will not receive full credit for it—in consequence of the source of his income; but when a voluntary clergyman does anything, his people sometimes feel as if they themselves had done it—they are so proud of him, whilst his good

deeds are remembered, and, it may be, magnified. The servant girl, who pays a few shillings a year for her seat-rent, hears her own voice speaking and praying in her clergyman in the pulpit, she feels an individual interest in all that he says or does, and there is dignity here, queenly dignity, dignity in the presence of which the highest earthly princess—who has the ministrations of her religion paid for by the State—might tremble. In her own right, person, and name, she approaches the King of kings, a living part of a living temple; she does not offer unto the Almighty ‘the blind for a sacrifice,’ or a sacrifice that ‘costs her nothing;’ by the sweat of her brow and toil-worn body she presents ‘a living sacrifice.’ All the State-aid clergymen in the world might justly envy the position of the minister of the gospel thus entrenched in the hearts of his people, the shield of protection cast around him, the object of his people’s prayers, sympathies, and support. It is pleasant to walk under the shade of the large, outspreading branches of a tree, which, as they wave to and fro, seem to bid defiance to the storm. The established Churches of Great Britain are, as it were, the parent trunk or stem, and the dissenting ones the branches or offshoots, and it is in alliance with and as forming part of the great parent stock, that the freedom which characterizes dissenting churches is derived. There is no freedom without law, order, and subjection, and there is not a dissenting body in Great Britain which does not derive benefits from the Churches established

by law, which temper and moderate the counsels of dissent, and repress tendencies which would inevitably tend to the destruction of civil freedom, and shake the foundations of the British throne. Men and women are only grown-up children, and it is certainly very ridiculous to see them enacting at times the very part of children in refusing to hear the gospel preached save by the clergyman of their own particular denomination, just as children may at times be observed to refuse their meals, because those meals are not presented to them in their favourite dishes.

In a newly-formed state of society, where the people are entrusted with the power of local self-government, it is absolutely necessary that the Church should occupy a parity of position, and be self-supporting and independent. The public welfare requires this. In such a condition of society, all the elements of a nation's greatness, honour, and prosperity, are lying, as it were, in fragments at the feet of the people, and the work assigned to every minister of the gospel is to gather up those fragments, that nothing may be lost ; and a great national work is being done when individuals are called on to contribute towards a clergyman's support. They are then called on not only to take a personal interest in religion, but to meet on common holy ground, to enter into a bond of society that holds them in union with each other, in union with the State, and in union with God. The man who does not enter into this bond, who does not attach himself to a Church, is

practically a heathen—an enemy to society, an outcast—a rebel to his country and to his God. There is no backdoor for him to get out at ; and, the fact is a most important one, that the State does not engage for the performance of any of *his* religious duties, and that if he does not himself establish a personal interest in a Church, religion and he have nothing to do with each other.

State aid and voluntarism are two things that do not work well together at the antipodes. The arrangement of the Government in regard to a road or bridge, the people giving one half and the Government the other (and this has been the mode in which State aid to religion has been administered), is as good as could be desired, for here are material things dealing with material, but in regard to a Church, or clergyman, the whole arrangement is an utter absurdity : it virtually takes away all motive or sense of obligation ; it robs and deprives the people of their Christian rights and privileges. Duties cannot be done by halves ; the human heart cannot be divided and portioned out, one half to the Government and one half to the Church ; persons will give to a Church or clergyman, freely, liberally, but when they have to meet an arrangement of the Government, it is an amply sufficient reason for them to give nothing, or if they do give anything, they give as little as possible, whilst nothing is thought of in the matter but the smallness of the amount necessary to avoid singularity, and to be saved from the reproach of meanness. In religion,

as in commerce, it will be found that a Government does its duty best when it avoids interference and leaves the channel open.

An owner of numerous squattages—a most excellent person—thought nothing of giving thirty thousand pounds for the erection of an opera-house in Sydney, and, had this gentleman's sympathies been enlisted in favour of the Church to which he belonged—the Church of England—he would as readily, and with infinitely greater satisfaction, have transferred the amount to it; but he and other rich persons will be very sparing of their donations to a Church, when all the honour of its maintenance is taken from them, and where they might justly complain of being deprived of their Christian duty and privilege of providing for its support; for giving money to a Church which the Government engages to provide for, might be far more properly termed helping the Government than helping the Church.

Sir Robert Peel once put a question in the House of Commons, how the rich people of Australia expended their money? was it in encouragement of the fine arts? Without any disparagement to the fine arts, the erection of Churches, and the maintenance of clergymen, afford in the meantime at least some room for the expenditure of their superfluous wealth, and when thus disposed of for the highest public benefit, it would be like throwing oil on the troubled waters; there would be less envy and jealousy of the rich, the bonds of society would be

more closely knit together, the voice of the wealthy in public affairs would be more attended to; whereas, now, the fact of their being rich would seem, in many constituences, to serve as a disqualification for their being returned as members of Parliament. Under such circumstances, clergymen would be seen in an entirely new and different aspect—they would possess the affections and the confidence of the people, and their influence would, therefore, be greater, whilst no case of complaint would occur (it is never likely to occur again) such as was made to the writer by a most respected clergyman, who, on arriving in Sydney, with his wife and family, found no interest whatever taken in him, he having been compelled to open a school. Had a truly Christian spirit been aroused, a soiree would have been held in his behalf, all the good said of him that could be said, and a great deal more, and justice would have been done alike to the clergyman and to the people who stood in need of his services. Every conceivable burden is laid on the shoulders of State-aid clergymen; they must do everything for the people, whilst, under voluntaryism, the people do everything for the clergymen. The position of the latter will generally be found to be more enviable, and the man who would be little thought of in a State-aid Church would be a perfect oracle in a voluntary connection.

Manhood suffrage and State-aid to religion is an anomaly—an absurdity—and it is not too much to say

that many of the great political evils in Victoria, and in New South Wales, are increased from the incongruous connection. Gathering and heaping up money is work that can be done any day by a coalheaver. There are a great many things in the world more valuable than money, and which money cannot purchase. There is truth, love, justice, honour, and humanity, which it is the great purpose of the Church to teach and to inculcate; and it can never so effectually teach these as when it puts them all in active operation, and draws them out towards itself. Clergymen have time and leisure to think—their minds are usually free and disengaged. They are accustomed to thinking, and they are also accustomed to speaking; but they must always live in a very quiescent state when in the pay of the Government, and can never be sufficiently identified with the people so as to have sympathy with them, and to make their voices heard in the redress of wrongs and injuries inflicted by the Government.

None of the Australian Governments, however willing they may be, can hope to deal justly in the question of aid to religion to all the different denominations without exciting disaffection amongst the people. There is quite enough of disaffection already, and was there ever such an enormity perpetrated in the name of religion as that of which the rich people in Sydney, its suburbs, and other places of population along the coast and settled districts have been guilty, they having been permitted to put their hands into the Government Church

box and take away all the money, and they *have* scraped it clean, for not one sixpence have they left for the people in the interior, of what used to be the twenty-eight thousand pounds given annually to the Church of England, the Church of Scotland, the Roman Catholic, and the Wesleyan denominations !

Nothing can be said definitely of Australian legislation since the advent of the era of manhood suffrage, except its changeableness ; and there are some persons who would rather be in their graves, or out of the world altogether, than live where they are, as it were, spitted like raw meat on a roasting-jack, and kept moving backwards and forwards before a blazing fire. Charles Cowper and Dr. Lang, the two great liberal politicians of New South Wales, succeed in carrying a bill through Parliament providing for the entire abolition of State aid to religion in that colony on the death of the present recipients. The bill has scarcely reached England to receive the Royal assent, when these very persons come forward with another bill or resolution, providing a large endowment for the several State aid Churches from the proceeds of the sale of the Church lands.

In New South Wales there are heart-burnings and disaffection from religious as well as from political adventurers and demagogues, who, intellectual nobodies at home, seek in the antipodes that gratification of their craving for notoriety which cruel fate justly denied them elsewhere. Scottish Presbyterians

have been long annoyed and scandalised by the quarrellings and uncalled-for interference in their Church affairs of two religious adventurers in Sydney, Doctors of Divinity, who seem to forget that the management of Church affairs was not entrusted to them, but to Dr. Steel, editor of the *Presbyterian Magazine*, and Mr. Purves, who was appointed by the Governor and Executive Council a member of the Senate of the University to represent the Presbyterians in the colony. It would be unpardonable to omit allusion to the Rev.

- J. D. L——, one of the most remarkable men in the southern hemisphere, who baffles every effort to arrive at any knowledge or definition of his character. Prophet, priest, and king, Brigham Young and Pope Pius the Ninth are the only two living men with whom he might be fitly compared. Scotland has been called a 'good country to live out of,' and Scotsmen make good colonists. Generally speaking, they are quiet, industrious, and unobtrusive in their manners, and like their native thistle or burr, they stick fast to what they have got. If a Scotsman makes money, it is usually thought that he is contented; and it is a perfect anomaly to find a Scotsman at the antipodes in the character of a great political agitator, increasing the turmoil of the vexed sea of political troubles. The rev. doctor said, 'I have a work given me by the Almighty to do in Australia;' and he seems always to have been living in the devout conviction of being divinely entrusted with the care and providence of the land and people,

and all the civil and sacred interests of Australia—Atlas-like, carrying them on his broad shoulders. Governors, senators, prelates, presbyters, have all suffered from the rod of his correction, whilst rich citizens, but unfaithful stewards, have also received his public rebuke and censure. He would appear, however, to have been serving a very ungrateful generation, despite his zeal for what he believed to be for the good of Australia. Despite extraordinary efforts in the cause of immigration, and political conquests gained, including manhood suffrage, there is not a district, river, creek, or gully named after him; and of the three colonies, Victoria, New South Wales, and Queensland, which have been more or less under his protection, Queensland is the only one that has responded to his call for remuneration for his services, and Queensland was well entitled to do this, in consideration of the plentiful supply of labour which he was chiefly instrumental in introducing to that colony.

Where there is a large concentrated population, the people will be always found able and willing to support clergymen of their respective denominations. In the agricultural districts, and at gold-fields, a clergyman is not confined to one locality; there may be two, three, or more places where he alternately officiates on Sundays. In the pastoral districts, and thinly-populated parts of the interior, and where, as has been already remarked, 'it may take a clergyman a whole day to travel over some man's run to see a family,' the case

looks desperate. Churches and congregations are an impossibility except at the small townships, where small gatherings of people may be obtained; and all that a clergyman can do is to travel constantly about from place to place, and from station to station. Resident proprietors of stations are always most attentive to clergymen of all denominations, and give an annual contribution to the Church to which they belong. Marriage-fees and the offerings which parents are accustomed to give on the occasion of the baptism of their children are also another considerable source of a clergyman's income.

There would always seem to be persons ready to fill any situation in the world, no matter what the situation may be; and there would be no want of clergymen in the interior if the actual truth was generally known. The clerical, more, perhaps, than any of the other professions, includes in its ranks many to whom Australia, with its favourable climate, and the riding and tossing about on horseback which are necessary, is the field of labour for prolonging their usefulness in the world.

Dr. Norman Macleod never uttered a truer saying than when he affirmed that 'missions had not yet commenced in the Church of Scotland.' Church machinery is useful for many things, but in entering into the field of missions a basis presents itself where Church machinery will not answer, a basis which shrinks at the approach of soiled hands and soiled feet. The wrangling and debates of Church courts are as far removed as are

the poles asunder from that which contemplates the propagation of the gospel of peace. The Church is one and indivisible—‘one Lord, one faith, one baptism.’ ‘If two of you shall agree on earth—;’ no, they will not agree on earth—they will not come down from their lofty position, not even though their Master bids them. The thought, no doubt, would be as appalling as if the earth were to open under their feet, and the apprehension as great as if one of their eyes were to be torn from its socket, or a limb wrenched from their bodies, to meet with clergymen of different persuasions at the same table. Orthodoxy? where, in all their tomes, will they find so much sound orthodoxy as this—clergymen uniting to preach the gospel? and what possible objection can there be—certainly no Christian objection—against the different colonial committees of the Church of Scotland forming themselves into one, and thus ceasing to spread disunion and disaffection amongst their people in the colonies? The place for clergymen to occupy may be found to be, not on the platform, receiving the plaudits of admiring multitudes, but ‘between the porch and the altar.’

CHAPTER XI.

DEMOCRACY AND ITS RESULTS.

A MURDERER CUTTING A MAN'S HEAD OFF—ARBITRATION
VERSUS LAW—AN IRISH SAVAGE AND CATHOLIC SKULL-
CRACKER — THIEVES WHO COULD MURDER TOO — A
PRIVILEGED CATTLE STEALER — LIBERALISM AND ITS
RESULTS — MEMBERS OF PARLIAMENT PROMOTED TO
INSPECTORSHIPS OF POLICE—HEAVY TAXATION—PUBLIC
MONEY SQUANDERED—A SHOPKEEPING CHANCELLOR OF
EXCHEQUER AND HIS BUDGET—THE STUFF OF WHICH
MEMBERS OF PARLIAMENT ARE MADE—THIRTY SHILLINGS
A WEEK FOR THRASHING WHEAT AND THREE POUNDS
FOR MAKING LAWS—RADICALISM AND RUIN — ANTE-
CEDENTS OF A PRIME MINISTER—A QUEEN'S COUNSEL
OPPOSED FOR PARLIAMENT BY AN ITINERANT LECTURER
ON PHRENOLOGY — SINGULAR LAND LEGISLATION —
RESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT AND DEBT—TWO MEN COOKS
ELEVATED TO THE JUDICIAL BENCH — EXTRACTS FROM
LECTURES DELIVERED IN SYDNEY BY THE AUTHOR ON
THE NEW SOUTH WALES LAND ACT.

DEMOCRACY, or government by the people, each individual who has reached the age of manhood having a voice in the legislation of a country, is rather a sublime idea, and when once begun, would seem to inaugurate, or at least to promise a Millennial reign.

The Millennium has not come yet, however, and man is still far from being so perfect, either in Australia or anywhere else, as to act towards his fellow-men with a scrupulous sense of honour and of justice. Empty pockets will influence some people's political creed astonishingly; and what a man will do for money, since Judas sold his Master, is a question which is likely to meet with much the same answer throughout the world. I knew a man named 'Tom'—'big Tom,' he used to be called—and what idea Tom had of manhood suffrage it would be hard to conjecture—probably that of cutting off a man's head as likely as anything else. Certain it is, that at the time the cry was raised for manhood suffrage, Tom did cut off a man's head—that of 'Ned,' another man whom I knew. Poor Ned! I had often spoken to him whilst travelling through the district where he was shepherding. He had, very unfortunately for himself, carried several years' wages about with him; 'big Tom' had learned this, went and killed him, at the same time severing the head from the body. The overseer of the station and the writer were on the spot on the following day, and it was some time before we found the head. There could be no doubt that it was 'big Tom' who had committed the deed, as he was the only stranger who had been seen thereabouts. There was no land law at that time, for the people were going and settling anywhere they pleased on the Crown lands, and 'big Tom' was very easily traced as the culprit;

but he got off, nevertheless; and by the alchemy of manhood suffrage was, no doubt, transmuted, like many of his class, into a voter, having practically a voice in legislating for honest men and disposing of millions sterling. The reins of Government in New South Wales, where the people have got law and government into their own hands, hang awfully loose—so loosely, indeed, as to be absolutely appalling to think of. No care is taken of, and no provision of any kind is made for, the people. They are permitted to go and settle anywhere. The land is not surveyed for them. If they quarrel, as they are almost certain to do when they settle near each other, as to the land that belongs to them, the great law is that they are to decide their differences themselves by means of arbitration; and if the arbitrators do not agree, an umpire is to be chosen, whose decision is to be final. A very easy way this of governing, but a frightfully bad one! One man said to me that he had ‘cracked some Catholic skulls during an Orange procession in Ireland;’ he was little better than a wild animal; he had two quiet, inoffensive neighbours, who had an undoubted right to the land which he occupied, but this savage claimed it, and it was dangerous to meddle with him. ‘*I will have it,*’ he said, determined to have it—at the same time uttering terrible threats of what he would do to them if they opposed him; and they had to submit quietly to be robbed to save their lives, for the law provided no remedy. In passing one

place where a barn had been recently burned, I enquired of a person in the neighbourhood how the fire originated; the answer was that the man who owned the barn had been quarrelling with another about the land, and it was supposed that the barn had been set fire to by the latter. Arbitration may take out the sting, but it leaves the poison. The great object of civil government, however, is to take out both sting and poison. Arbitration! as if all the people in New South Wales were saints and angels! One man mentioned to me incidentally that he had overheard some conversation between a few persons of that character of which there has been so ample and varied an assortment consigned from Great Britain and Ireland. Whilst they were calculating the risks to which they would expose themselves in some exploit, the following words fell from the lips of one of them, '*I can murder too.*' The man who can 'murder too' is not a desirable neighbour; and it is anything but agreeable to have one that can 'murder too' quartered upon you by the New South Wales Government, it may be within a few hundred yards of the homestead, or in the middle of a property valued at twenty thousand or at sixty thousand pounds. The man who can 'murder too' is *liberal* to the backbone. He sets no value on his own life, and he thinks very indifferently of the lives of others. Besides the man who can 'murder too,' there is no insignificant number of persons who have been born and accustomed

to theft from their very infancy; and one actually stands aghast at the advantages, opportunities, temptations, the bounty, in fact, which the New South Wales Government holds out to these individuals for plying their unhallowed vocations, and in the following out of which they have not the least remorse of conscience. They don't believe, indeed, that they are doing wrong, and steal simply because it is their business to steal. In a cattle-station about twenty miles in length and twelve in breadth, the stockman was dismissed by the owner of the run for bad management. Agreeably to an Act of the Legislature of New South Wales, however, the stockman came back and settled on a part of the run where he knew he could do a 'roaring business,' as it is termed, and get hold of unbranded cattle. There was a young man in charge of the station, with several men to assist him, but they had not the least chance in the world with the old stockman, who knew all the ridges, gullies, nooks and crannies perfectly, and had also some men lounging about the place to assist. The young man had no peace during either night or day; was simply powerless, in fact, such is the revolting condition to which affairs have come; he could not attend properly to his employer's interest—not even if the New South Wales Government, with its usual liberality, had sent fifty policemen to assist him. One always requires, and indeed sometimes learns to his cost, to be cautious in what he speaks in certain spheres at the antipodes, where

the expression, 'two eyes, two ears, one mouth,' is well understood. At this distance, however, there is no great danger to be apprehended from the old stockman in saying that I saw him early one morning at a gold-field with a herd of young unbranded cattle for sale.

Reasoning is not the *forte* of the people; they require others to think for them. They have a strong craving for excitement, and love to have their passions roused; a 'great fire,' a 'brutal murder,' a 'shocking death,' or a 'terrible castastrophe,' please them extremely, as the proprietors of Sydney papers know well. The work of destruction and pulling down they can all set their hands to, and do it vigorously, but the work of building up is beyond their power. To please the people, by pandering to their passions, would seem to be the sole primary object of candidates for legislative honours in the New South Wales Parliament. Liberal, liberal, amazingly liberal—all vying one with the other who will be most liberal; and it is frightful to contemplate the oppression and cruelty to which the people are subjected from the so-called liberalism. Policemen here, policemen there, policemen everywhere; no limit to the number of policemen to stop up the gaps and guard the pitfalls which liberalism has made, whilst the people are most grievously taxed, and the colony burdened with debt, to provide for the huge expenditure occasioned by misgovernment. A disinterested observer would actually arrive at the

conclusion that the members of the New South Wales Parliament were damaging the colony as much as they possibly could, in order that they might provide situations for themselves in the police force, and a few of them have succeeded in obtaining situations as inspectors or superintendents of police, which, oddly enough, happened immediately after the salaries of those offices were largely increased, and after they themselves had voted the large increase.

The Hon. E. D. Thomson, C.B., a name favourably known in the colony, and who was for a long period Colonial Secretary under the old *regime*, estimated in his place in the Upper House of Parliament, the expense of Police and District Courts '*as £1 per head for every man, woman, and child, so that, in a family of eleven, they would be paying £11 a year for Police and District Courts alone.*' At the same time, he remarked that the money which ought to be employed for making roads and bridges was '*squandered and laid out most unproductively.*' Paris is France, and Sydney is New South Wales; a building for a university is erected in Sydney, at a cost of £100,000, whilst £10,000 are given annually for salaries of Principal and Professors—all from the public revenue—but I never heard of more than twenty-five boys attending the university. Families in the interior, whose children, far removed from church and school, are growing up like wild men, are taxed most exorbitantly to educate gentlemen's sons, and it is the same with Grammar

Schools, the poor are taxed to educate the rich. The Government has no money to make roads and bridges, and to form settlements in the interior, because all which it can command is used to fatten and pamper a Sydney oligarchy. Responsible Government pays the Sydney-ites magnificently. Population being the basis of representation, Sydney, its suburbs, and other places of population near the coast, returning the majority of representatives, they have got all the Government appointments and all the Public Finances into their own hands, and a fine mess they make of those finances, and of much else. A Sydney shopkeeper, of 'advanced liberal opinions,' holding the position of Colonial Treasurer, which has attached to it a salary of £2,000 per annum, comes forward with his budget and reports a highly flourishing state of the public revenue — 'large surplus over expenditure,' etc., etc. — 'All bosh!' says a man of figures, Mr. Alexander Campbell, accountant, Sydney, who happened at the time to have a seat in the Legislative Assembly; 'there is no surplus,' continued Mr. Campbell, 'there is an immense deficiency of revenue against expenditure, there are hundreds of thousands of pounds of deficiency.' 'A very bad man,' retorted one of Her Majesty's Ministers, who has since been elevated to the Speakership of the Legislative Assembly, 'he must have a practice of "cooking" accounts, to suspect others of doing so.' 'Cooked' or not 'cooked,' it afterwards appeared, on the appointment of a less 'liberal' Colonial Treasurer,

that Mr. Campbell was perfectly right, and that the goodly sum of nearly one million sterling is forthwith added to the debt of the colony. Persons' minds are influenced very much by their occupations, and candlemakers, grocers, carters, innkeepers, undertakers, and such persons in New South Wales, who would seem to regard legislation as a trade at which money is to be made, may be very worthy men, and might be safely entrusted with the management of sewers and cabbage gardens, for these are subjects which they might be reasonably supposed to understand, being fully able to comprehend all the magnitude of the interests involved, but in regard to making laws for the government of a country of the enormous extent of New South Wales, for seeing into the future, for studying the remote bearings of legislation, *that* is utterly beyond the reach of their thought and comprehension. One of these 'legislators' of the New South Wales Parliament had been shepherding and driving cattle where I was wont to travel, but, having met him at a later period, the following are the very words which he spoke to me, 'I was working at a thrashing machine and getting thirty shillings a week; I am a Member of Parliament now, and have been promised three pounds a week.'

Whatever may be said in favour of or against colonial radicals, when the government of the affairs of such a country as New South Wales falls into their hands it would be unjust to deny them the credit of 'system.'

Skilful hands at demolition, they begin at the foundation—the labouring man—labour, the foundation of all wealth, interfered with, taken from its noble place, and like some worthless thing, tossed to the four winds of heaven; the contents of the building next remain to be ransacked—busy industry—one thinks of her at the distaff; the carefully accumulated earnings of years, of fathers, mothers, and children, all laid out on the homestead; it may be four, or six, or eight pounds per acre paid for the land, each one hopeful and confiding under the great guardian eye of the law, satisfied that their property is secure, and shall be preserved safe and untouched. Sad delusion! the Australian radical spares nothing; he tears up everything by the roots. An Act of Parliament is passed by the radical Legislature of New South Wales reducing the value of all the holdings of the most industrious and deserving class of the people to the dead *level* of five shillings per acre, such being the price at which all the best land of the colony is liable to be seized—I say to be seized. A gentleman, with a wife and nine children, brought a considerable sum of money with him into the colony. He invested a large portion in the purchase of land, but expressed to me his regret that he had done so, because six hundred acres, for which he had paid £3 10s. per acre, was now, through liberal statesmanship, worth only five shillings per acre. Another case of a family belonging to an humbler rank of life—and they are both given

as illustrations of the manner in which all landed proprietors have been treated by their radical rulers—may be mentioned. I had known the family for thirteen years, whilst they were dairying at a cattle station in a remote part of country, and dragging their dairy produce to market long distances over mountain ridges, creeks, and gullies, where there was scarcely a definable path. The family were all desirous, however, of being near some town where they would be within reach of church and school—a desire not always evinced by families long resident in the bush. After rigid domestic economy, and a world of sorrow, care, labour, and anxiety, they had saved five hundred pounds. The father attended a land sale by the Government, at a place intended to be the site of a future town, and bought one hundred acres at £5 per acre. About a year afterwards, the land for which he had paid into the Government treasury £500 was reduced in value by the same Government to £25.

There is some truth in the saying, that ‘leading politicians have no property themselves, and they do not care anything for the property of others.’ It was somewhat cruel on the part of a roadside innkeeper, who was Member of Parliament for the district to which the Hon. John Robertson belonged, to upbraid the honourable gentleman in the high house of Parliament, for having once earned a livelihood by impounding cattle, and reminding him of the falls from his horse, which he repeatedly met with, whilst chasing poor, unfortunate

neighbours' stray cattle, with the object of getting the pound fees. Mr. Robertson, when thus twitted, was entrusted with the administration of all the Crown lands, and had been Prime Minister of New South Wales. With regard to land legislation, the mischievous results of manhood suffrage are strikingly significant. It may be urged that whilst the Government permits the people to scatter themselves throughout the colony, here, there, and everywhere, and to select the choice portions of the land at five shillings per acre (no one is permitted to select more than three hundred and twenty acres), settlers are required to pay fifteen shillings additional, on an extended system of credit, for every acre which they may select; but, when Mr. Robertson became unpopular, in consequence of the great loss of public revenue which had occurred during his administration, a bush surgeon, who succeeded him as Minister for Lands, suggested, in a speech to his constituents, that they should not be called on to pay the balance of fifteen shillings per acre, whilst some other liberal members, desirous apparently of surpassing Mr. Robertson and his successor in liberality, proposed that the people should receive the land for nothing. But the land is too dear for nothing when there are no conveniences in the form of roads and bridges, churches and schools, and it is absurd to ask and to expect the people to settle on the land, when the Government does not engage to provide them with these absolute requirements of modern civilization. In fact, the Government

has entirely relieved itself of all obligation in the matter, because, chiefly in consequence of mismanagement, it has no money to make roads and bridges, here, there, and everywhere. Mr. Darvall, Q.C., an eminent lawyer, who has repeatedly filled the office of Attorney-General, spoke the simple truth when he said in his place in Parliament, 'The Government have reduced the price of land below zero.' It is a fact of some significance that Mr. Darvall had great difficulty in getting a seat in Parliament, as he was nearly defeated during the last election by an itinerant lecturer on phrenology.

'A little wisdom is required to govern,' is a proverbial saying, but the strangest matter in connection with New South Wales legislation is, that one sees no wisdom at all in it, nothing save blind passion, and ignorance led by poverty. Scatter the people! why scatter the people when they are so alarmingly scattered already? 'Scattering of the people' seems to be one of the greatest curses of the Almighty, as when once scattered, they are no better than sheep—they cannot defend themselves, and fall an easy prey to persons who, like wolves, care for them merely to prey upon them. Society may be compared to a parent: it provides many things for people which they would never think of providing for themselves, or anticipate the need of. A shepherd or a bullock-driver, when he settles down on a beautiful green sward at the bending of a creek or river, does not think sufficiently of the situation he has

placed himself in, he does not think, for example, of one of many difficulties—what an expensive matter it will be for him to get skilled medical attendance, in the event of himself or any of his family requiring it. A mere lad, from a medical school in Scotland, who had come to Australia to make his fortune, went into the interior on a professional tour, and he told the writer, with some glee, that he had charged, and had received, forty pounds for one visit to a family. The family was rich—a squatter's one—and could afford to pay this very high charge; but this was not the case with working people, one of whom, an industrious mother of a family, I knew to have been charged eleven pounds by the same lad for one visit to her sick husband, and she had to sell her cows before she could pay the sum demanded. The unscrupulous Scotsman rated his income at fifteen hundred pounds per annum, and he retired, after a few years' practice, with a fortune. With an equal population in Scotland, he would not have received fifteen hundred pence. Wherein lies the so-called liberality of the New South Wales Government in thus allowing and urging the people to scatter and settle anywhere? Such a policy is injudicious in the extreme, as the people are powerless to defend themselves against extortioners of every class, professional and unprofessional, and the writer could multiply instances almost *ad infinitum*, showing the immense disadvantages which result from such a policy. The large graziers—the squatters—might be said to lose little or nothing from

the want of roads and bridges, save in the carriage of the yearly supplies for their stations, as sheep and cattle can be easily driven to market where there is no proper road. The case is entirely different, however, with the small purchasers of land, who have succeeded in growing crops of wheat, maize, and potatoes. I saw a carrier charge one of these settlers two shillings and sixpence per bushel for the carriage of wheat a distance of only twenty miles, whilst the freight from California to any of the Australian ports is only about threepence per bushel.

The New South Wales Government does not believe in, if indeed it understands, political economy. Hundreds of thousands of pounds are sent away every year to Chili, California, and South Australia, in payment of wheat and flour, a great sum of which might be retained in the colony, if the administration would act honestly and wisely. I have seen drays loaded with flour, imported from the countries mentioned, travelling three, four, and five hundred miles to gold-fields and to stations in the interior, in the dividing ranges, where wheat could be grown in almost any quantities. But, without public expenditure in the making of roads and bridges, no agriculturist could grow crops with advantage to himself. Thirteen thousand pounds were taken from the public treasury, during one year, to purchase seed wheat for reduced farmers—money which a judicious Government might have saved by directing farmers to parts where their crops would not

be so likely to fail. The fact is deserving of notice, too, that during the same year two thousand pounds were taken from the public treasury to pay for private theatricals, a grand piano, etc., to the Governor. After this, no one could possibly call in question the loyalty of Her Majesty's responsible radical Ministers. The public would have known nothing of this had it not been for Mr. Martin, Q.C., the present Premier, who was strongly opposed to the passing of the Land Act about the same time. During the Cowper and Robertson administration, when the great levelling processes were going on for reducing the value of land and lowering the status of magistrates, and when bushranging had just commenced, a photographer proposed to present Sir Alfred Stephen, the Chief Justice, with likenesses of Her Majesty's Ministers, but Sir Alfred replied that 'he would not have them unless there were halters round their necks.' The opportunity of serving his own ends, whilst such unprincipled men were in office, was not to be lost by a supporter of the Ministry—one of the Sydney representatives, who had been appointed sole trustee of a charity towards which twenty-five hundred pounds had been contributed by the British Government and twelve hundred pounds in subscriptions by the people—and he accordingly came forward himself with a bill to Parliament, proposing that all the lands and houses of the charity should be given to him, as a free gift, in consideration of his valuable services to the colony. Some of the Members, prominent among

whom was Mr. Peddington, a respectable bookseller in Sydney, were most indignant. Her Majesty's Ministers, nevertheless, consented to the bill being laid on the table, and a committee was appointed to attend to it, the petitioner being a most important person in their eyes, and his support indispensable. Almost unexampled tyranny — a reign of terror, in fact — prevailed at this time, and it seems hard to explain how it was so patiently borne. The readers of the *Sydney Morning Herald* are familiar with the word 'retaliate.' The following is an illustration of the retaliation referred to, as gathered from a letter, signed 'J. H. Broughton,' in the columns of that journal. It appeared that Mr. Broughton, a squatter, had opposed the election of a son of the Premier, and that in consequence the Minister for Lands high-handedly deprived him of his 'run.' All the other squatters could not fail to learn a very significant lesson from this—namely, to keep their mouths shut, and, above all, to be careful not to oppose Her Majesty's liberal Ministry. Mr. Broughton was the first to discover the country which he had occupied, whilst he had suffered much from the blacks. He stated that in losing his run he was ruined in his worldly affairs, and, what grieved him most, was the fact that friends who had advanced money on the station were also involved in his loss. Not one voice was lifted up, however, in behalf of this gentleman, who lost nearly all which he had in the world, because he endeavoured to discharge a high public duty.

No act of legislation could compare in point of importance with that of the settlement of the lands, for this was laying the foundation of the political and social future of the colony, and establishing conditions which would influence the latest generation. Mr. John Hay's proposal, when the Land Act was discussed in Parliament, was the proper one, that of 'agricultural reserves'—to select a good part of country, survey it, and let the people settle down quietly beside each other; but, unfortunately, Mr. Hay was educated, rich, and a squatter, and he was not listened to, although he had great knowledge and experience of the country, and was acquainted with the modes of life of the people, whilst the 'go anywhere' members knew little or nothing. And it would really seem to be an offence to be rich. Mr. Holt, a wealthy member, who has a fine mansion outside of Sydney, is engaged speaking in the House of Assembly, saying some very disagreeable things; a poor member rushes out of the House and sends a note by the messenger to Mr. Holt, stating that 'his fine mansion is all in flames.' Mr. Holt is stopped in his speech; the poor member brings himself into notice by this trick, and is afterwards rewarded for his zeal and fidelity in being elected chairman of committees, at a salary of six hundred pounds, though Mr. Martin, and other members qualified to give an opinion, declared the man to be totally unfit. The cattle station referred to in the beginning of this chapter, was one of the districts pointed out by Mr. Hay as suitable for an agricultural

reserve. It is what is called 'high table land,' and there are similar utterly neglected tracts all along the summits of the dividing ranges, with plenty of water, and running streams, the country resembling New Zealand rather than Australia, whilst the land is good, and there is little or no danger to be anticipated from droughts or from floods. The people's savings invested in land in such districts would always have a permanent value, whilst there would be no likelihood of Government being called upon to give money to keep them from starving. They could not starve, in fact, as potatoes and English vegetables could be grown there with as much certainty as in any part of Great Britain and Ireland. There were gold-fields not far distant, and I saw copper ore on the surface in one direction, and marble, with one kind of coal, in another direction. This part of country ought to have been regarded by the New South Wales Government as an oasis in a desert, invaluable as a field of settlement. But, without roads and bridges, all that the Government would be receiving from it for a year would not be more than sixty pounds, allowing twenty pounds for five hundred head of cattle. This splendid district was, in fact, worse than valueless, as it served only for a few persons, whose chief occupations were stealing and quarrelling. The Member of Parliament for this part of the country was a poor attorney, so very poor, indeed, that he had to receive employment from the Government in prosecuting and defending cases in the Police Court.

It is impossible to give any general idea or definition of the New Land Act of New South Wales. It reminds one only of Sancho Panza's feast. It is contained in a small volume, and consists of a large number of clauses clogged with conditions, meant apparently to apply to every possible case which occurred to the imagination of its author, Mr. Robertson, who was aided by the Government draughtsman. One clause, taken by itself, may be quite intelligible, but there are other clauses which defeat it entirely. For instance, the clause which provides that one who takes up any quantity of land from forty to three hundred and twenty acres, but not more than three hundred and twenty acres, shall have the right of grazing granted him over three times the quantity of land adjoining at a small rental, is intelligible enough, but, unfortunately, there is another clause which admits of any one purchasing the grazing land, and the man who counts upon his grazing land is mistaken, for he is not certain of it for twenty-four hours. Then there are clauses about roads, water frontages, reserves, but no one can tell what a road or water frontage is, or where there are reserves, hence there are endless disagreements, whilst the people are always making mistakes. A large number of working men, with their families, settle on land occupied by the Twofold Bay Squatting Company; the company succeed in making out a case that they had the pre-emption right of the land, so that the working men, with their

families, receive notice from the Government that they have permission to move their houses and fencing, but get no compensation. I saw a family, the whole of whom had been engaged for a long time in shepherding at one place, and who subsequently settled on a beautiful piece of land not many miles distant from where they had been so long residing. The overseer of the station mentioned to me, however, that he had given them notice to remove, as it was a reserve, and that, if they did not do so, he had instructions to burn their house down. Stragglers and others are sometimes called on to pay Government officials, who simply fleece them. A Government Surveyor assures one that he is all right where he has settled, but the case is subsequently disputed, and the Surveyor will not travel a few miles for a smaller sum than ten pounds to support the truth of his assertion. The inevitable conclusion to be arrived at is, that the Government has parted with all care and interest in the Crown Lands, and has left them to be dabbled with and destroyed for purposes of settlement, in any way which the people choose. This indifference to the great question of the land may be said to be of no significance in comparison with the indifference which is evinced in connection with matters of paramount importance. Government has made war to the knife against churches and schools, a fact which is easily explained. If a man buys land at any of the numerous places appropriated as the sites of townships, he must buy it at a public auction, the minimum price

being one pound per acre, but if he goes away from any of these proposed townships, he can select choice portions of land for five shillings, with fifteen shillings credit. The effects of this, of course, are to seduce the people away where they will be out of reach of church and school, and to put an end to townships altogether. I have known some of these sites of townships—which had been laid out at great expense by the Government—purchased altogether by the squatter of whose ‘run’ they had formed a part. The fifteen shillings per acre credit is a most iniquitous arrangement—a bait, or a trap, for seducing families away from the neighbourhood of a town, under the temptation of a cheap bargain, whilst those persons are always fallen back upon, and charged as much as if they had settled beside a town.

It is right to give credit where credit is due; and there is a great deal to be said in favour of that part of the Land Act which provides for the people obtaining possession of the land without being subjected to competition at sale by public auction. A case which occurred during my own experience will illustrate some of the tricks played at public land sales:—The managers of a church of which I was clergyman, requested me to attend a Government sale at a town which I was accustomed to visit, and to purchase some lots of land contiguous to the church, whatever the price might be. Those who opposed me in the bidding evidently wanted the land merely to sell it again at a profit.

These persons may serve as a *tableau vivant* of anti-podean 'Go-aheadism.' No. 1.—The auctioneer himself—a Government official; it was said that he had realized six thousand pounds by trafficking with lots of land, which had been put into his hand for sale. No. 2.—I had known him as drover, manager of a station, gold-digger, clerk, commission agent, etc. Responsible government opened up a new field for his versatile talents; he distinguishes himself at an election in favour of a liberal candidate, and receives Her Majesty's Commission of the Peace, stands for a constituency himself, and is returned Member of Parliament, sits for a short time, voting unflinchingly with the Government, and is finally rewarded with a Government situation, at a salary of five hundred pounds a year. No. 3.—A storekeeper—a large speculator in land, but lost everything which he possessed when Government reduced the value, and subsequently died insolvent. No. 4.—A Jew—rather odd this. Jews are famed as innkeepers, storekeepers, and vendors of jewellery, but one never hears of them as farmers. The mystery was solved, however, immediately after the close of the sale, when the Jew came to me and offered the lots which he had purchased, and which I had myself bid for, if I would give ten pounds for his bargain. I declined his offer, and he was very much irritated, as he had lost more than ten pounds in the deposit of twenty-five pounds per cent.

Responsible Government is very expensive to all

the Australian colonies, and to New Zealand. The working classes have derived no benefit from it; in fact, they have been injured. They have been too frequently made use of as stalking-horses to hoist individuals into Government situations, whilst they have been so burdened with taxation, year after year, for the maintenance of expensive Government machinery, that the cost of living in these Australian colonies is now really a serious consideration. There would have been less taxation, and Government would have been far more economically and judiciously conducted, had it remained in the hands of a few intelligent rulers, whilst there would have been more public confidence in the colony. From frequent sudden changes in the administration—such as are caused by an over-expenditure, as has happened lately in nearly all the Australian colonies—large numbers of working men are thrown out of employment, wages are reduced one-half, whilst there are many who cannot obtain employment at any rate whatever.

The public debt of New South Wales is already eight millions sterling, to pay the interest of which there is taxation amounting to one pound per head for every man, woman, and child. Expensively or inexpensively governed, the facts remain clear as the light of day, that the wealth-producing classes in the interior have not the boundaries of their land defined for them by Government; that they are left to decide their differences by arbitration—to govern themselves,

in fact—whilst all which they see for Government expenditure are policemen and lock-ups.

We extract the following (in which there are several fallacies, in relation to the expenditure of other Australian colonies, which we need not now expose) from a speech delivered by Mr. Cowper in 1865, shewing the expensiveness of responsible Government in all the Australian colonies:—

‘There were in all two thousand four hundred and nine officers, receiving salaries amounting to four hundred and twenty-nine thousand nine hundred pounds. I find that the expenditure of the police in the year 1855 was one hundred and sixty-eight thousand seven hundred and seventy-four pounds, and in the year 1865 I find it was one hundred and fifty-two thousand three hundred and twenty-five pounds. I mean the police irrespective of police magistrates and clerks of petty sessions and that part of the police called judicial. This is the expense of the executive police. And I would also draw attention to the fact that, during the last few years, considerable reduction has taken place for these services. The Government felt that if the bushrangers were put down, or nearly put down, that economy might to some extent be introduced. While I am speaking of our expenditure, I would draw the attention of the committee to a document which has been placed in my hands by my hon. friend the Colonial Treasurer, to show the expense of the Government of this colony compared with the cost of

Government in other colonies. There is an impression that we are an expensively governed colony, but I believe that we are most economically governed. The colony of Victoria, with a population of six hundred thousand persons, and an estimated revenue of five pounds three shillings and twopence per head, costs for governing five pounds four shillings and tenpence per head. New South Wales, with a population of four hundred thousand, and a revenue of four pounds seven shillings and fourpence per head, costs for governing four pounds eight shillings and a penny per head. Queensland, with a population of fifty thousand, and a revenue of eleven pounds eleven shillings and fourpence per head, costs for governing ten pounds fifteen shillings and ninepence per head; and South Australia, with a population of one hundred and fifty thousand, and a revenue of five pounds eighteen shillings per head, costs for governing five pounds sixteen shillings per head.'

It is well known that the *Sydney Morning Herald*—the leading journal and great commercial authority of New South Wales—has pronounced responsible government a failure. Its wealthy proprietor, Mr. Fairfax, in consequence of the fearless honesty of his journal, receives very little of the thirteen thousand pounds doled out annually from the public treasury to newspaper proprietors, in the shape of payment for advertisements, and its able editor, Rev. John West, is one who stands in awe of neither rich nor poor. Another

inquiry like that of Jamaica may not be forthcoming, and the services of certain honourables dispensed with, but there are some matters which require to be well understood. The *Sydney Morning Herald* has called on the British Government to send out at least one minister to take charge of the Public Finances. There is more, however, which requires and which demands the attention of the British Government, and, among other matters, an explanation is required of the New South Wales Government, why young men living and growing up in the interior of that country are *shot by policemen*. The writer attributes those atrocities to a want of civilization, and has charged the New South Wales Government with perpetuating that want of civilization by framing a law which enables the people to settle anywhere they please on the Crown lands, with a bonus of fifteen shillings in the pound credit to all who would settle out of the reach of a township, where they would be certain to be without church or school, and beyond the reach of humanizing influences. The fact is undeniable, too, that bushranging broke out during Mr. Robertson's administration, when the Government, pandering to the passions of the people, yielded to the cry of 'free selection before survey,' gave them all they asked for, and laid law and government prostrate at their feet. The writer wishes to be candid, and he gives the cause of bushranging as alleged by the opposing party in the Legislative

Assembly, when the subject was under discussion for several days. The principal cause assigned was the fact of Government having lowered the status of magistrates and of those holding Her Majesty's Commission of the Peace. Some recent appointments are certainly very remarkable. A gentleman, with whom the writer was acquainted, Mr. Darby, New England, had a cook named Peter, who, busy from morning to night amidst pots and pans, grease and dirt, received Her Majesty's Commission of the Peace. In a neighbouring township, another worthy, who had been recently a cook, but had risen in the world and become a storekeeper, received a similar appointment. Peter had more sense than the statesmen who endeavoured to thrust greatness upon him, for he resigned, knowing well that his sphere was the kitchen and the scullery, rather than the judicial bench ; but his *confrere* took his seat, whilst the other magistrates resigned, among whom was the late William Tydd Taylor, an English barrister, previously Member of Parliament for the district, and the noblest minded man who perhaps ever set foot on the shores of Australia. There were many other cases of benches of magistrates resigning from similar causes. The object of such appointments is well understood, as well indeed as it can be. Peter the cook's vote was as potent as that of his master ; and it is to people of Peter's grade, the manhood suffrage men, that persons like Mr. Robertson are indebted for their high official position. The

shoulders of cooks, of murderers who can cut a man's head off, and of thieves who can 'murder too,' may serve better than the shoulders of gentlemen and of honest men for enabling political charlatans to rise to greatness and to power. But, looking at the splendid resources of New South Wales, one thinks of the cradle of a great empire—of the child dwarfed and crippled through ignorance, neglect, and cruelty, who, under wise guidance, might attain to the full vigour, strength, and stateliness of manhood.

The concluding portion of this chapter consists of extracts from a series of public lectures, which were delivered by the author, in Sydney, during September 1863—the year when the New Land Act came into operation—and which were advertised in the Sydney daily newspapers as follows:—'The New Land Act in its relations to civilization, bushranging, labour, and industry, the rights and liberties of the British subject, morality, and Christianity; by the Rev. John Morison.'

. 'Go anywhere' sounds very well—large, liberal—but it is nothing save 'sound and fury.' There is not a grain of reason in it. A storekeeper in the interior, who also kept a publichouse, said that he had accumulated twenty thousand pounds. This large sum was not got from the squatters but from working people, and if the people are scattered they pay highly for everything. The merchants of Sydney know well that bad goods, bad everything, are sent up to the bush: 'anything is good enough for the bush.' If the

people are settled in communities, living is cheaper; there is competition among storekeepers; there are roads and bridges; employment is provided for the different handicrafts; professions, occupations, branches of industry are created, and there are all the appliances and advantages of civilized life. I hold that it is the duty of the Government to find out or to open channels for labour and industry, and sacredly to guard and protect those channels. Had a written document come down from heaven, the duty of the Government could not have appeared clearer than it is—to fix on parts suitable for the settlement of a community. Government has the means of knowing, but the people have not the means of knowing, where settlements may be made with the best likelihood of success; and I maintain, that to permit them to settle anywhere they like is simply to drive them headlong to ruin. I saw some families who had settled on a part of country which had been long well-known to me; they said that everything looked green and beautiful when they saw it first, whilst there was a running stream of water conveniently situated; but they were completely ruined; not a seed which they sowed came above ground, and there was no water nearer to them than ten miles. Mr. Robertson said that his Land Act treated all the squatter's alike, no one had his run taken from him. The people left like sheep to scatter themselves over their runs, here, there, and everywhere! All the lands of the colony are put on a par; there is no more care or interest taken in one

part than in another. Providence has made the greatest possible distinction, of all the immense interior—the fall of water to the westward—and there is certainly the richest soil on the banks of the rivers, where families might be induced to settle during one or two favourable seasons, but Providence has denied a favourable climate. A severe drought such as that which occurred last year, would render them absolutely destitute, and a cry would be raised here as on the occasion of the famine in India, and the colony would be put to the very greatest expense in affording relief. There are those who have great faith in mankind, who hold that a man when left to himself will always act in the best way for his own interest. There never was a greater delusion; habits are easily formed, bush habits like every other kind of habits. Employment at stations has always been regarded hitherto merely as a stepping-stone to a better position—a means of making money for future settlement in a town or neighbourhood. Few or none have ever thought of remaining permanently in what may be properly termed the ‘bush.’ I knew two boys who had been long engaged in shepherding who, in consequence of the loneliness of their life, almost lost the faculty of speech, and, as they would not herd any longer, their parents were obliged to purchase land near a town, where the boys recovered the use of their speech and became like others. How many will be induced to remain in the bush, under this Land Act, lost to all the humanizing influences of

society, lost to the colony, lost for ever? I saw a family of ten, not one of whom could read or write, taking land near where they had been long employed at a station; they could have got as good land at one of the places appropriated as the sites of townships, but they stuck to the cheap bargain offered them by Government, fifteen shillings in the pound credit for settling where they would be certain to know nothing of churches and schools. It is impossible to avoid expression of abhorrence of a Government acting the part of the Great Tempter. Society is a sacred contract, sealed and ratified in heaven, and established for the good of the individual. Man was born and framed, materially, morally, religiously, and politically, for society. He can only display the beauty and perfection of the handiwork of his Creator in society, but the Legislature of New South Wales has taken this sacred vessel and broken it—dashed it in pieces on the ground. Society contains within itself all the elements necessary to its own preservation: wickedness is repressed as a common enemy; virtue is cherished as a friend; and it is under such circumstances that ‘the voice of the people is the voice of God.’ But if society is hacked, dismembered, hewed in pieces as it is by the New Land Act, each dismembered portion will cry aloud like blood from the ground for vengeance. The sparseness of population in pastoral districts—every man being marked—is the great safety and protection to life and property; you, the Government, are entrusted with the charge of both,

and you are not free to allow the people to settle any where they please. Lord Brougham has said that the nation which has the right to hang has the right to educate. How can—how *possibly* can you educate the people if they are scattered everywhere and anywhere? How can you govern them if they are scattered everywhere and anywhere? It is owing to their being so much scattered that there is such an enormous expenditure of public money for police; and if they are scattered more it is plain enough that there must be an additional taxation to meet the larger expenditure. There is bushranging—you may say that this, and that, and numbers of other things, are the cause of it, but we must go to the real cause for the origin of the evil, and to find out the remedy. Those high, massive walls and strong towers! Reverence for law and authority have been laid prostrate at the feet of the people. The Government has been legislating for covetousness—pandering to the passions of the people, and a spirit of adventure has been made to supplant all those motives to care, prudence, and frugality, which are the very foundations of individual as well as of public well-being, happiness, and prosperity. Example is proverbially a more effectual teacher than precept. There are mysteries in human nature that will not bear to be solved, there are hidden wheels which conduce to stupendous results, and mould the whole life and conduct. Both heart and mind will take an indelible impression from the very soil upon which the foot is

treading. There are influences continually at work which, like the air we breathe, circulate through, ramify, and permeate the whole regions of heart and mind. Legislate for the land and you legislate for man's moral constitution, for it is there that the barriers of right and wrong are established. The New South Wales Government road to wealth, however, the example and the rule of public morality, is the starting-point of *debt*. People are to get rich, not by the time-hallowed methods of labour and industry, but by *debt*!

It was said in praise of some Legislators of antiquity that they left a monument more enduring than brass—the impress of their minds on the laws of their country, but our legislators surpass them immeasurably. I will say nothing of leaving the impress of their minds, for that is very difficult to see, but there is one thing most distinctly visible, and that is their stomachs. ‘Who has got the rights?’ one asks in the matter of the land. The Government most unquestionably holds the rights. The land might be said to be valueless—worse than valueless—without these rights. The Government is very liberal, very liberal indeed, in much the same way as all vagabonds find it very convenient to be liberal with that which does not belong to them, the hearts and consciences of the people. There is a law of gratitude established within the human breast, and conscience supports that law. If a man does me a favour my conscience rebels if I do anything to injure him. The Government gives the people credit for fifteen shillings

in the pound, which is the same thing as giving them money, and they are, therefore, not free to speak against the Government. All the principles of civil freedom spring as it were from the soil. We must take our ideas of liberty, not from dreams and fictions, we must endeavour to realize and embody them. All true, all manly sentiments have disappeared. A reign of despotism is all that one sees in the vista of the future. Law supersedes all that would have stirred and excited the heart of every individual to a sense of public duty. It would have been perfectly competent for a private person to have made an arrangement with another, such as the Government has done with the people, and this is done every day in the relation of master and servant. The heart and conscience of the servant are both perfectly free, however. The law protects him in the arrangement; but what possible protection can there be when one is wholly in the grasp of the protector? The British lion, in England, is a noble animal; it stands by and watches over you; it guards you; it sees that not one hair of your head is touched, but in New South Wales it is a voracious brute—it takes you into its very mouth and swallows you. The Government is bound for its own sake, for its own safety, to give up all the rights in the land. He who has all his rights in the land is a strong arm of Government; he has the greatest interest in the preservation of law and order. It is altogether different with him, however, whose right of possession rests on a simple word or promise of

Government; he never can regard Government save with sentiments of fear and dread; cannot regard it otherwise than as his greatest enemy on earth, all-powerful to dispossess him of his holding, and the destruction of that Government might be his rescue and safety. It is needless to refer to the character that must be produced in a people who are bound down as the tools, the menials, the dependents of Government. They must stand in slavish fear of that Government; they must have every true and every manly sentiment of freedom and of independence stifled within them.

There are surely some qualifications indispensable to the legislator. Preparatory to being a minister of the gospel, a lawyer, a physician, society strictly enforces a course of education, and is not satisfied unless the candidate has submitted himself to an examination to prove his fitness for the work which he aspires to perform. But to be a legislator in this colony nothing more would seem to be necessary than to take up some such cry as 'Free Selection before Survey,' or any other that may for the time be uppermost in the people's minds, and he who bawls loudest, and makes the strongest protestations, bears the palm of victory. A ploughman was asked in a court of justice if he could read Greek? He answered—'I don't know—I never tried.' It is exactly the same order and quality of mind that is brought into the legislation of the country. Candidates do not know if they can legislate or not until they have tried; and these gentlemen want to be

paid for their services. They confess that they are tradesmen, not legislators. Honour then is a saleable commodity, and they desire the die of the State mint to be put upon it as worth so much in pounds, shillings and pence. It is honour, honour alone, and nothing save honour, to which legislation can be safely entrusted, and the standard of honour cannot be fixed too high. The laws cannot be too perfect—too pure—and the minds of the legislators cannot be too free of every stain of baseness and of self-interest. They are sitting on the throne and legislating with God on earthly matters. It is honour that supports the throne and enshrines the sanctuary of the living God, and it demands the self-sacrificing spirit of His Son, who in vindication of that honour, and in purchase of civil freedom, lived on this earth in want and wretchedness, and died in agony.

Our legislators sometimes take it into their heads to speak of blockships in Sydney harbour, but so far as any emigration into the colony is concerned, I believe that we can boast of the finest blockships in the world. That *honourable* member was a very Solon in legislation, a Solomon, a Daniel come to judgment, who stood up in his high place in Parliament and called upon the 'free selectors to select land near each other and they would fight the squatters.' This patriotic sentiment was published in the monthly summary of news sent to Great Britain, as also the fact of the *honourable* member's appointment to a

Government situation—a road overseer. What must the people in Great Britain think of a settlement in New South Wales, when it is necessary to fight for it? But the *honourable* member was perfectly correct; no one can take up land under the New Land Act without fighting.

It is astonishing to see what a mass of complicated evils will spring up and stare one in the face, all from going out of the plain beaten path. Evil will produce evil, confusion will produce confusion, and there is no possibility of touching or handling them without increasing and multiplying them. It is simply impossible to estimate all the mischievous results of the New Land Act, more particularly in regard to the material interests of the colony.

Many have spent years of hard toil in establishing for themselves homes of independence, but the Land Act has come in, and reduced their property to a mere fraction of their former value. All confidence in industry is destroyed for the future, as the law of New South Wales affords no security for the solidity of the foundation upon which it rests. The Government has interfered with that which every enlightened Government is careful to avoid interference with—labour and industry. When and where is this interference to stop? It is to Acts of Parliament that the people must now look for the sources of wealth! Mr. Robertson is ever indulging in self-congratulation as to the magnificent working of his Land Act. There is an art

in this, which no one knows better than Mr. Robertson himself, for he has drank largely of the well of Mephistopheles: 'have confidence in yourself and others will confide in you.' A spendthrift, with more money than brains, might stand at an open window, and, with a sackful of half-crowns, shillings, and sixpenny pieces, heave handful after handful to the crowd underneath, who, turning round, gaping and laughing, might say, 'isn't this magnificent!' 'See how I please the people!' There is nothing magnificent in it whatever: it is merely a scramble—that is all—and cannot last for ever, and you are a fool to do such a thing, and they are greater fools who permit you to do it, for the land is not yours: posterity has a claim upon it. As to pleasing the people, of course, I grant you all this, for there is nothing else in it, but it is only for a time. Mr. Robertson always puts me in mind of a mad draper who bespatters his window fronts with 'bankrupt stock—tremendous sacrifices—selling off at less than original cost.' No sooner has a township been laid out, and land surveyed at great public expense, than he puts the whole up for sale by public auction. The township is destroyed; the squatter purchases the land at the upset price to keep the people off his run. When the land has been surveyed why not let the people select their land there? He put up for sale in one day five thousand acres beside Armidale, and it was the best land which I have seen in the interior with plenty of water. The townspeople petitioned him

not to sell it at present, as they had the benefit of it for grazing their cows, working bullocks, and horses, but Mr. Robertson answered the petition by saying that he wanted the money, and, as was anticipated, the squatter, of whose run this land originally formed a part, purchased the five thousand acres which had been surveyed into small farms at the upset price of one pound per acre to keep his run intact. The day after the sale the townspeople's cows, bullocks, and horses were driven into the pound. And now for the political economy of the Government; the manager of the station said that he had instructions from his employer—a gentleman said to be possessed of twenty-five thousand pounds a year—to bid as high as ten pounds per acre for this choice portion of land, and here was forty-five thousand pounds lost to the public treasury in one day's sale. The Land Act has been called an attack on the waste lands of the Crown; it would be far more appropriately termed an attack upon the townships; an attack upon civilization, upon churches and schools, upon the labour or the industry of the colony.

I entertain the highest regard for those families from whom, in the performance of my duties far and wide, I have received the rites of hospitality, and my earnest prayer for every family of the colony is, that peace, quietness, and rest shall be in their dwellings, and that law and Government in the colony shall be strong to protect them. But if the Land Act is to continue the law of New South Wales, the funeral knell of New

South Wales has been rung; and I cannot conceal from my mind the dreadful future which is before it; a future in which it will become a stigma and a disgrace to the British name and the British Empire, a byword and a reproach among the nations. I do not believe that there is one individual in the community who understands one-thousandth part of the tremendous shock that has been communicated to the very foundations of society. No faith in the present, no faith in the future! Of the future the mind cannot endure the thought and contemplation: it is as if the very earth were shifting from beneath our feet; the fountains of iniquity have been broken up; and a perfect deluge of wrath threatens to overwhelm the whole colony.

The Hon. John Robertson, in enunciating the principle adopted as a kind of basis for his Land Act, said, 'If a man was in love with a bonnie lassie, if he did not get the lassie he wanted he would go and spend his money in a public house.' Common sense is said not to be common, but I do insist and maintain that one filling the highly responsible position of a 'Minister of the Crown,' and who has been Prime Minister of the colony, was justly called on to display a little—I do not say much—common sense instead of sheer humbug and downright nonsense. Begin to establish a principle of this kind, that a man is to take what he likes, and where are you?

The Land Act violates the sacred claims of industry, the nurse and handmaid of every domestic virtue, and

of those bright moral qualities, personal freedom and independence.

There was a Man who lived on earth, the poor man's Friend, the Friend of the people; He loved the people and He loved His enemies; He saved others, Himself He would not save. 'Behold the Man!' an example to all, the study of all, the salvation of all. He would not bow His head to the most powerful Government that ever appeared on earth. They might crucify Him, but He would not part with aught of that allegiance which He owed to God His father: to Him, and to Him only, did He commit His spirit. Our Lord was the Great Emancipator, the Great Freeman; He laboured with His own hands, and exalted labour to a state of the highest rank and dignity, and he who has His labour to rely on as the means of his support, is in no way inferior to the duke, with the coronet on his head, or to the king, with the sceptre in his hand. Far higher—far nobler is his station: he is a fellow-worker with God; it is the function of Deity to work—'My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.' Upon this high altar has labour been consecrated as the precious boon of life of the poor and the fortress and citadel of their freedom and independence. 'Fear not, fear not them which kill the body, 'Be not ye the servants of men,' 'Call no man master on earth, there is none good but one, that is God.' Is there aught that for a single moment can hold in comparison with the exalted rank and dignity of that individual, who, however poor, can claim God as his friend and

helper—who relies upon his own labour and blessing from above for his support, and who, in true manhood and ransomed freedom, lays his hand fast on the rock of ages ; and in Godhead, humanity declares ‘I am a man.’ But the Land Act takes away everything that distinguishes him as a man ; he is a mere creature of the earth ; mere goods and chattels ; a mere tool in the hands of Government.

THE END.

